# To the Armenian Youth of America

My dear Friends:

This Grammar, the first in America, has been written for you.

It is the Grammar of the language spoken by one part of Armenians.

You are born in America. You know well the language of the great American nation. Perhaps you understand also the language of your parents who have immigrated from the old country; but you cannot read the papers they read, and you hesitate to speak their language because you are ashamed of the mistakes you may make — you, the well educated American citizens!

This Grammar will help you to read, write and speak Armenian correctly. It is an easy job if you have the firm purpose to overcome the initial difficulty. With every step forward, the joy will increase, and the difficulty will decrease.

Be not discouraged by the Armenian letters! They are the main part of the initial difficulty. For your facility the symbolic transcriptions have been added to the Armenian words.

Follow the course of Grammar, paying careful attention to the rules and the illustrating examples. Read, write and memorize every Armenian word. In order to speak, less than 300 words suffice in any language. At the end of this Grammar your vocabulary will be much richer than that.

It is supposed that you are in possession of grammatical knowledge in general. Therefore, the terms of Grammar do not need to be explained to you.

ш

Few pages have been added to the Grammar for (1) conversation and (2) reading material. They will help you to speak and read Armenian.

The vocabulary at the end will prove very helpful to your reading.

I am pleased to think that you will grow in knowledge and love of the Armenian language. After having completed the courses you will feel happy und proud of having learned a new language, that of your forefathers — the language of a nation with a great history and literature.

With every good wish

Yours truly,

#### S. L. K.

Acknowledgement

I gratefully acknowledge my indebtedness to Miss Alice Topjian of Watertown, Mass., for typewriting and to Mr. Joseph Topalian of Worcester, Mass., for his invaluable proofreading and patient cooperation.

.

# Literature

Հ․ Ա․ Այտընեան, Քննական Բերականութիւն արդի հայերէն լեզուի, Վիեննա 1866։ — – Բերականութիւն արդի հայերէն լեզուի, Բ․ տալ․, Վիեննա 1883։

Չալըխեան-Այտընեան, Քերականութիւն Հայկազնեան լեզուի, Վիեննա 1885:

- Հ․ Եւ Զ․ Ասատուր, Գործնական Քերականութիւն արդի Ալխարհարարի, Կ․ ۹ոլիս 1911:
- Dr. Artasches Abeghian, Neuarmenische Grammatik, Berlin und Leipzig 1936.
- Հ. Ա. Եղիայեան, Ոսկեփորիկ Հայերէն ուղղագրութեան, Գլովդիւ 1941:
- 2. Ա. Վարդանեան, Շողակաթ, Բ. Տարի, Վիեննա։
- A. Meillet, Esquisse d'une grammaire comparée de l'Arménien classique, Vienne<sup>2</sup> 1936.
- A. Goilaw, Deutsch-Armenisches Wörterbuch, Wien 1889.
- Ս. Գաբամանեան, Նոր բառգիրը Հայերէն լեզուի, Կ. Պոլիս 1910:
- Rev. Matthias Bedrossian M. M. D. D., New Dictionary Armenian-English, Venice 1875—1879.
- Lbo, Lugny ¶umdn. [[] μ. U., β-β. [] μ. 1917:
- Ս. Փափազեան, Ութ լեղուեան խօսակցութիւն, Կ. ۹ոլիս 1908:
- Ա. Չօպանեան, Դէմբեր, Ա., Պարիս։

# Contents

To the Armenian Youth of America	III
Adknowledgment	V
Literature	

#### **ARMENIAN GRAMMAR**

#### PRELIMINARY

#### READING, WRITING AND SPELLING

§§	Pa	ge
14	The Armenian Alphabet; Vowels; Diphthongs;	
	Consonants 3-	-7
5-12	Orthographic Rules	8
13—20	The problem of voiced and voicelles Con-	
	sonants	14
2135	Alternation and Suppression of Vowels	
	and Diphthongs	15
36—37	Alternations of Consonants	19
38—39	Syllabification	19
40	Punctuation	21
41	Accentuation	23
42	Capitalization	2 <b>4</b>

# PART FIRST --- WORDS AND FORMS

#### NOUNS

43-46 Gender	27
47—50 Definite Article	28
51-53 Indefinite Article	29
54-63 Number of Nouns - Plural	30
64-65 Cases	33
66—78 The three Declensions: First Declension (70);	
Second Decl. (73); Third Decl. (76)	34
79 Substantives of pecular or irregular De-	
clension (Archaic Forms)	41
80 Classic singular Case-endings in Modern Armenian	42

55		Page
81	Instrumental Case-endings as Adverbs	43
	Classic Case-endings in Plural	43
	Stemwords in #	45
	Stemwords in 8	45
	Different Case-ending — Different Meaning	46
	Classic Accusative, Ablative and Locative	47
	Definite Article in Declensions	48
ADJECTIV	'ES	
9798	Position of Adjectives	51
	Comparison of Adjectives	51
105	Superlative of Adjectives	52
106	Numeral Adjectives	53
107-113	Cardinal Numbers: Declension of Cardinals (108);	
	Number of Nouns with Cardinals (111)	53
114-117	Ordinal Numbers	54
118	Distributive Numbers	56
119	Mltiplicatives	56
120	Collectives	56
121	Fractionals	57
122	Numeral Adverbs	57
PRONOUN	IS	
123	Personal Pronouns: 1st Person; 2nd Person; 3rd Person	58
126—133	Possessive Adjectives and Possessive Articles	59
134—139	Possessive Pronouns	60
140—147	Demonstrative Adjectives and Pronouns; Declension of "",	
	ημ, δω (145); Declension of δημ (147)	61
148—149	Relative Pronouns	65
150—161	Indefinite Pronouns	65
162-165	Interrogative Pronouns	69
166	Reciprocal Pronouns	70

#### VERBS

169—180 Numbers, Persons, Moods, Voice and Tenses of Verbs	72
181—188 Auxiliary Verbs	74
189—192 The three Conjugations	78
193 Verbs in	79
194—204 Derivative Verbs (Derivatives with -1-; -1-; -1-; -1-)	79
205-216 Present and Aorist Stem	82
216—219 Paradigms of Verbs: Indicativ Present, 1 <sup>st</sup> , 2 <sup>nd</sup> and	
3 <sup>rd</sup> Conjugation	84
220 4mc instead 4c	86

167 Reflexive Pronouns .....

55	-	~9
221 V	erbs in	86
222 Su	ibjunctive Present	87
	dicative Imperfect	87
	ubjunctive Imperfect	89
	rst Future	89
	rst Conditional	90
239-243 Pr	ohibitive	91
244—248 In	finitive	92
249-256 Fu	uture Participle	92
	esent Participle	93
	rfect Participle	94
	orist: A orist in $-h$ , in $-wy$ , in $-hL$ , in $-\xi hL$ , in $-\xi hL$ , in $-\xi hL$ ,	
	$-\hbar \omega_l$ , in $-\kappa_l$	95
	erfect and Pluperfect	101
302—307 Im	-	102
308—330 Pa	issive Verbs	103
	eflexive Verbs	108
	cciprocal Verbs	109
341—356 No	egative Form of Verbs	109
35 <b>7—360 T</b> h	ne Periphrastic Conjugation	114
361—366 Im	personal Verbs	115
367—399 In	regular and Defective Verbs	117
PARTICLES:	ADVEDRS	
		126
	erivation of Adverbs	120
	dverbs in Classic Case-forms	120
	dverbs in	129
	dverbs with pronominal Article and Suffixes	129
	lassification of Adverbs: Adv. of Place (412),	
10	Time (413), of Manner (414), of Cause (415); Interroga-	
	ve Adv. (416); Affirmative — (417); Negative — (418);	120
	ubitative (419)	130
420 Co	omparison of Adverbs	135
PREPOSITION	NS	
422—427 Th	ne Classic Prepositions (wa, h, j, q, g, cuq, cum)	136
	epositions in Modern language	138
429 Ma	odern Postpositions	138
	rticles with optional Position	139
431 Po	stpositions with Articles	140
<b>4</b> 32 De	clension of Postpositions	141
	assic Form-Cases as Postpositions	141
	lverbs used as Postposition	
436-437 Inf	lected Particles	143

Ρ	a	g	e

•

§§		Page
CONJUNCTIONS		_
439—442 Coordinate Conjunctions	 	144
443—448 Subordinate Conjunctions	 • • • •	145
449-450 Conjunctions in exemples	 	146
INTERJECTIONS	 451-	452
	ļ	с. <b>.</b>
PART SECOND - SVNTAX		

#### INTAA

454—458 Subject and Predicate	153
459-466 Agreement of the Verb with its Subject	154
CONSTRUCTION OF CASES	

467 Use and Meaning	. 156
468—476 Nominative Case: Predicate and Attribute (469)	
Apposition (474); Nom. with Adjectives (475); Nom. as Vo	•
cative (476)	
477—496 Genitive Case: Place of the Word in Gen. (480)	
Gen. and Definite Article (482); Gen. with Nouns (486)	
Gen. with Particles	
497-509 Dative Case: - as indirecte Object of Transitive	
Verbs (501); - with Special Verbs (502); - with Intransi	
tives (503); ethical — and — of Reference (504); — of Pur	
pose (505); — of Price, Measure, Time and Age (506	
— with Adjective (507); — with Particles (509)	. 162
510-521 Accusative Case: Two - (513); - with Intransitive	Э
Verbs (517); — of Time, Measure, Weight (518); — of Place	3
(519); — of Specification (520)	. 166
522-537 Ablative Case: - of Separation (523); - of Source	
Origin and Material (524); — of Cause with Intransitive	э
Verbs (525); — of Agent with Passive Verbs (526); — o	
Duration (528); — of Specification (531); — with Adjecti	
ves $(532)$ ; — of Comparison $(533)$ ; Partitive — $(535)$	
$-$ with Particles (537) $\cdots$	
538—551 Instrumental Case: — expressing means (539)	
manner (541), Specification (542), Cause, Origin, Country	
Prefession (543); Extent of Times and Space (544); Adverba	
(546); Qualities $(547)$ ; — is used with Adjectives $(549)$ and	
Particles (550)	
552—564 Use of the Definite Article; Omission of — — (556)	
565-569 Use of the Indefinite Article	
570—575 Use of Adjectives	. 181
576—583 Use of Numerals	. 182

P	Ъβ	9

şş	P	age
58 <b>4—</b> 593	Use of Peonouns; The Pronouns $h_{\mu} - h_{\mu} h_{\mu}$ , $w_{\nu} - w_{\nu} h_{\nu}$ (587); Relative - $n_{\mu}$ (588); Order of Prenouns in a Sentence ((593)	184
SYNTAXE	OF THE VERBS	
595	Indicative Mood	187
596606	Sujunctive Mood: Hortatory — (597); Optative —	
	(600); Questions in — (601); Potential — (602); Conditional	
	(603)	187
60 <b>7—608</b>	Imperative Mood	190
609-624	Infinitive Mood; — as Noun (610); — as Verb (611);	
	— with Impersonal Verbs (612); — as Complement of	
	Verbs (614); — in Accusative (615); — in Dative (616);	
	- of Cause (618): of Purpose (619): - as Adjective (621):	

	of equae (010), of rupose (015), us fujeente (021),	
	— in Ablative (623); — in Instrumental (624)	191
625	Tenses	195
626-630	Tenses of Indicative: Present; Historical Present (628);	
	- for Future (629); - for Imperative (630)	195
631-633	Imperfect; — for Present (632)	196
634	Aorist	198
635639	Future	198
640	Conditional	199
641-643	Prefect and Pluperfect	199
644-648	Sequence of Tenses; Sequence in Conditional (645)	200
649-651	Participles: Present -; English Present - compared	
	with the Armenian (651)	201
652658	Perfect Participle: — as Verb (653); — as Adjec-	
	tive (654); — as Noun (657)	203
659-661	Futur Participle	205
662	Special use of Passive Voice	206
663664	Complement of Inpersonal Verbs	206

#### SYNTAX OF PARTICLES

665668	The negative Particle "¿	207
669670	The Prepositions difficient, qt up	208
671681	The Conjunctions $p_{\xi} \cdots p_{\xi}$ , $q_{wd}$ , $k_{L_1} - nL$ (673); $-p_{\xi}$ ,	
	"r (675); Indiomatig use of "r (679)	208
682-687	Order of Words	211

#### VARIOUS KINDS OF SENTENCE AND CLAUSES

688 <b>—689</b>	Sentences: Compound Sentence; Complex - (689)	213
690695	Clauses: Relative — (690); Temporal (Adverbial) —	
	(691); Causal - (692); Final - (693); Concessive - (694);	
	Consecutive — (695)	214

<b>§</b> §	I	Page
696- <b>7</b> 00	Order of Words in Supstantive Clauses	216
	The Period	
702710	Ellipsis: Ommission of a Noun (703); — of a Noun	
	and a Verb (704); - of indefinite Pronouns (705); - of	
	Copula (706); — of Complementary Infinitive (707); — of	
	Pre- or Postpositions (708); — of Conjunctions (709); — of	
	the entire Sentence (710)	217

# PART THIRD — COMMON PHRASES - BEADING

#### COMMON PHRASES

٠

712—730 To ask and answer (711); To offer (712); To ask (713);	
To grand (714); To refuse, to excuse one's self (715); To	
give and receive thanks (716); To consult, to deliberate,	
to advise (717); To affirm (718); To deny (719); Probability	
(720); Doubt, surprise, admiration (721); Joy (722); Afflic-	
tion (723); Anger, reproaches (724); Compliments (725);	
Of the age (726); Hours (727); Of the date (728); Of the	
seasons (729); Of the weather (730)	

#### READING

731—732 Հայկական Սարահարի — Լէօ	234
733-735 Հայ լեզուի եւ աղդի ծագումը - Մէյէ-Լէօ	235
736—737 Հայ գրի զտիչը ՄաչԹոց եւ հին մատենագրական լեզու —	
Ալտընեան	237
738—740 ինչե՛ր կը պատմէ Հայերէն լեզուն — Վարդանեան Հ. Ա	238
741—744 Արդի Հայերէնը եւ Հայ լեզուն — Շանթ	<b>24</b> 0
745—747 Մխիթար և Հայ նկարագիրը — Չօպանեան	243

.

# **PART FOURTH**

ARMENIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY	251

# ARMENIAN GRAMMAR ՀԱՅԵՐԷՆ ՔԵՐԱԿԱՆՈՒԹԻՒՆ

PRELIMINARY - 9C8PCU80F@FF6

· . (

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

# READING, WRITING, AND SPELLING

#### THE ARMENIAN ALPHABET — ՀԱՅԵՐԷՆ ԱՅԲՈՒԲԵՆԸ

1. The Armenian Alphabet consists of 36 letters representing 6 vowels, 30 consonants. Every sound has its proper letter, except the vowel  $\bar{u}$  which is expressed by a combination of two letters (nL). — For this reason  $\bar{u}$  does not figure in the Alphabet. We have, however, listed it after n.

The Armenian Alphabet is the work of the famous Armenian Priest *Maštoč* (later called Mesrop) in the year about 403 A. D.

Actually there are 38 letters, two new ones  $(o, \mathbf{P})$  having been added in the twelfth century.

# VOWELS - ՉԱՅՆԱՒՈՐ

2. The Armenian vowels are  $u, t, \xi, h, n, nL, \mu, o.$ a) u is always pronounced like "a" in "car": השוף (bari) g d, kind;

b) Initial *E* is pronounced like "ye" in "yet": *Ep E u (yerek)* yesterday; medial *E* is pronounced like "e" in "met": *Ep E u (yerek)* three;

c) Initial *n* is pronounced "vo": הוחב (votk') foot; הגן (vočzar) sheep.

4

# LIST OF LETTERS

Printed	Phonetic and Organic Value	Pronounced like	Tran- scription in this book	Name of letter	Numer. value
И, ш	Vowel	a in car	a	uyn ayb	1
β <sub>μ</sub>	Occlusive, voiced, labial	b in bar	b	ក្នុង ben	2
94	Occlusive, voiced, guttural	g in get	g	երիս gim	3
<u>ጉ</u> -	Occlusive, voiced, dental	d in day	d	ų da	4
b k	Vowel; initial	ye in yet	ye	μ <sub>ε</sub> yeč	5
	medi <b>al</b>	e in get	e		
2 q	Dental, sibilant, voiced	z in zest	Z	qш za	6
\$ Ē	Vowel	e in bed	ē	ξē	7
L <sub>C</sub>	Half Vowel	a in about	ð	eld at	8
ØĒ	Aspirate, voiceless, dental	t in time	t <sup>e</sup>	Fin to	9
<i>ቆ</i> ቆ	Sibilant, palatal, voiced	s in pleasure	j	, μξ jē	10
<i>Þ þ</i>	Vowel	i in miss	i	huh ini	20
$L_{L}$	Liquid, linguo-dental	l in lamp	l	the lyun	30
h p	Spirant, unvoiced, guttural	ch in Germ. Bach, Russ. x	X	jut ze	40
<u> </u>	Half-occlusive, sibilant, unvoiced	z in Italian zinco	ż	ъш ża	50
44	Occlusive, unvoiced, guttural	k in skate	k	կեն ken	60
24	Consonant, unvoiced, a breath	h in heed	h	Šn ho	70
<b>2</b> ð	Half-occlusive, sibilant, voiced	z in adze	ž	бш ža	80
ዲጊ	Voiced, liquid, guttural	gutt. r of French, or Germ. g in Tag, or mod. Greek $\gamma$	r	ղшт yat	90

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

6 6	Palatal, half-occl. unvoiced, sibil.	g in Italian ligio	ġ	۵ <b>ڊ</b> ģē	100
ר און	Liquid, labial	m in might	m	մեն men	200
8 1	a breath, unvoic., bef. vowels a. init.	h in he	h	<b>jl</b> hi	300
	after vowels	y in yet	y	51	
ር ኔ	Liquid, nasal	n in nine	n	<b>บกเ ก</b> นี	400
52	Sibilant, unvoiced	sh in short	Š	<u>гш</u> ša	500
<i>П</i> "	Vowel, initial	like vo in vo-yage	vo	ı <b>f</b> ın vo	600
	medial and final	like o in o-ral	о	L	ļ
*/1_	Vowel	like oo in mood	ū		
2 2	Pal., voicel. asp., half-occl., sib.	ch in church	č	<u></u> уш ča	700
Ящ	Labial, occlusive, unvoiced	p in sport	p	ų ę pē	800
22	Palatal, voiced half-occl. sibilant	g in large	ğ	25 ğē	900
ſŀĸ	Lingual, liquid	r in French rose	ŕ	пш †a	1000
U u	Linguo-Dental, sibilant, unvoiced	s in site	S	ut sē	2000
44	Labio-velar, voiced, spirant	v in voice	ν	ybr vev	3000
Տտ	Dental, occlusive, unvoiced	t in skating	t	արւն tyun	4000
ſŗ	Liquid, lingual	r in English rose	r	pi rē	5 <b>0</b> 00
8 g	Half-occl., aspirate, voicel., sibil.	z in Ital. grazia, Russ. ц	Ċ	уп ČO	6000
ħι	Spirant, labio-velar		w	jhi hyun	7000
	voiced	v in very	ν		
Φų	Occl. labial, aspirate, voiceless	p in port	p'	<i>փիւը</i> թ՝ yur	8000
₽ <sub>ℓ</sub>	Occl. guttural, aspirate, voiceless	k in kind	k	₽ <b>Ş</b> k'ë	9000
0 0	Vowel	o in more	ō	n Ö	10000
\$\$	Spirant, labial, voiceless	f in fine	t	<b>\$5</b> fê	20000

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

Qτ

#### THE WRITTEN ARMENIAN ALPHABET

Exceptions from this rule are: n. (read ov) who, n. (1/1/1) Inu (ovkianos) ocean, n. (uu) (ovasis) oasis.

Medial *n* is pronounced like "o": 4nqh (hogi) soul, 2nqh (šogi) steam.

d) The vowel *n* is pronounced like "v" if another vowel follows: *upumnump* (*patvar*) bulwark. In foreign names and in Verbs in *-n*<sub>L</sub> it keeps its proper sound  $\bar{u}$ : *Upufn*<sub>L</sub> $\xi_L$  Sam $\bar{u}el$ ; *upupnubn*<sub>L</sub>h (k<sup>3</sup> zbosn $\bar{u}i$ ) I was having good time.

e) The vowel  $\underline{\mu}$  is pronounced like "a" in "about", or like "io" in "passion". It must be pronounced, although not written, before initial  $\underline{\eta}$ ,  $\underline{z}$ ,  $\underline{\mu}$  when they are followed by  $\underline{\mu}$ ,  $\underline{\mu}$ ,  $\underline{\mu}$ ;  $\underline{\eta}$ ,  $\underline{\mu}$ ;  $\underline{\eta}$ ,  $\underline{\mu}$ ;  $\underline{\eta}$ ,  $\underline{\mu}$ ;  $\underline{\eta}$ ,  $\underline{\eta}$ ;  $\underline{\eta}$ ,  $\underline{\eta}$ ;  $\underline{\eta}$ ;  $\underline{\eta}$ ,  $\underline{\eta}$ ;  $\underline{\eta}$ ;  $\underline{\eta}$ ,  $\underline{\eta}$ ;  $\underline{\eta$ 

Exceptions: In some words the  $\underline{\mu}$  is pronounced after  $\underline{z}$ ,  $\underline{u}$ :  $\underline{z}\underline{\rho}\underline{h}\underline{\eta}$  ( $s\overline{a}k^{c}e\gamma$ ) splendid;  $\underline{u}\underline{\rho}\underline{h}\underline{u}$  ( $s\overline{a}k^{c}em$ ) monk's habit;  $\underline{z}\underline{\eta}\underline{n}d\overline{d}$ ( $s\overline{a}p^{c}ot^{c}$ ) confused, confusion;  $\underline{u}\underline{h}\underline{n}\underline{h}\underline{h}$  ( $s\overline{a}p^{c}rel$ ) to scatter, to diffuse.

If q, z, u are followed by consonants other than those mentioned  $(p, \tilde{u}, u', q, l)$ , the  $\vartheta$  is pronounced after initial q, z, u:  $q_{luuluu_l}$  (zolanal) to refuse;  $z_{luuluu_l}$  (solanal) to be dazzled;  $q_{luulu} \leq (z \partial r a h)$  cuirass;  $u_{luul} \leq (s \partial r a h)$  hall.

The  $\vartheta$  is pronounced, although not written, between two consonants beginning the word:  $d_{1}$  ( $v \vartheta nas$ ) harm; 4 (ump ( $h \vartheta nar$ ) means, resource;  $p_{1}$   $m_p$  ( $k^{2} \vartheta nar$ ) lyre.

If the consonants are three or four, the  $\partial$  is pronounced after the first and third ones: *unpunlift* (*tartangel*) to complain.

The  $\vartheta$  is pronounced, although not written, between a consonant and final p,  $\eta$ , or the Personal Articles u,  $\eta$ , u:  $\mu u \mu \mu$ (kaysər) caesar;  $\beta u u \mu \mu$  (t'atər) theatre;  $u u u u \mu \mu$  (santər) comb;

mumq (astar) star;  $\mu [\mu \mu u (girk^{\delta} s)$  my book;  $\mathcal{L}_{uj} \mu (hayrad)$  thy father; mum multip  $\mathcal{L}_{uj}$   $\mathcal{L}_{uj}$ 

The  $\underline{p}$  is not only pronounced but written also for syllabification (39 g).

#### DIPHTHONGS — ԵՐԿԲԱՐԲԱՌ

When  $m_j$  and  $n_j$  are final, the j is not pronounced:  $k_{II}k_{III}$  (yerek $\bar{o}$ ) evening;  $\mu_{IIII}$  ( $k\bar{a}$ ) there is.

Exceptions: In the following monosyllables the  $_J$  is pronounced:  $\mu m_J$  (bay) verb;  $\nu m_J$  (nay) liquid;  $\lambda m_J$  (hay) Armenian;  $\mu m_J$  (vay) woo! In  $\mu m_J$  ( $\lambda oy$ ) ram, the  $_J$  is not mute, but the diphthong  $m_J$  is pronounced oy not uy.

b) The vowel  $\mathbf{L}$  followed by  $\mathbf{u}$  and  $\mathbf{o}$  forms the diphthongs  $\mathbf{L}\mathbf{u}$  (ya) and  $\mathbf{L}\mathbf{o}$  (y $\bar{o}$ ):  $\mathbf{L}\mathbf{L}\mathbf{u}\mathbf{u}\mathbf{p}$  (kyank') life;  $\mathbf{L}\mathbf{o}[\mathbf{d}\mathbf{p}]$  (y $\bar{o}t'\partial$ ) seven.

c) The letter  $\iota$  forms diphthongs with uu(uuL), lu(luL), lu(luL);  $\mu uuL(bav)$  enough; luL(yev) and;  $\mu luL(k'iv)$  cornice. The  $\mu L$  is pronounced yu when it is followed by a consonant belonging to the stem:  $\mu L \eta(yu\gamma)$  oil;  $\eta luL \eta(gyu\gamma)$  village;  $\ell \mu L \eta$ (hyur) guest;  $uu \mu luL hu$  (aryun) blood.

#### CONSONANTS — FULUQUES

4. The value and the pronunciation of Armenian consonants have been listed according to their origin (no. 1). But by shifting of consonants, the pronunciation of  $\mu$ ,  $\eta$ ,  $\eta$ ,  $\delta$ ,  $\xi$  has become like  $\psi$ ,  $\rho$ ,  $\beta$ , g,  $\xi$  and the pronunciation of  $\mu$ ,  $\eta$ ,  $\pi$ ,  $\delta$ ,  $\xi$  has become like  $\mu$ ,  $\eta$ ,  $\eta$ ,  $\delta$ ,  $\xi$ . Western Armenians can not pronounce the mute explosives  $\mu$ ,  $\eta$ , m,  $\delta$ ,  $\delta$ . In technical words: the mediae (voiced) are pronounced like the aspirates, the tenues (unvoiced) like the mediae. Instead of the threefold graduated consonants (mediae, tenues, aspiratae), Western Armenians have only two degrees mediae and aspiratae. The loss of the tenues makes difficult both the spelling and the pronounciation, because the original orthography of Armenian words is preserved but the words are not pronounced accordingly.

Students must learn meaning and spelling together. This is the surest way of avoiding orthographic mistakes. The following directions may prove to be helpful.

### ORTHOGRAPHIC RULES — ՈՒՂ<u>ՂԱԳՐԱԿԱՆ</u> ԿԱՆՈՆՆԵՐ

5. Final  $\mu$  must be followed by a mute  $\int \partial \mu n \mu \eta (zar\bar{a})$  servant, slave;  $\rho \mu \beta \mu \mu \mu \eta (k'ahan\bar{a})$  priest.

Exceptions: a)  $m \leq m$  (aha) behold !  $\leq m q m$  (hapa) well! come now! then! m q m (apa) then; m m (sa) this; q m (da) that; m m (na) he, she, it; m m h q m (asika) this one; m m h q m (atika) that one; m m h q m (anika) the third one;  $\leq h m m$  (hima) now.

b) The Imperatives: μμημμ' (karda) read (2nd Person Singular) μμημ' (χaγa) play; μμμ' (gəna) go, etc.

c) The Proper Names: U.S Lphum (Amerika) America; bupmum (Europa) Europe, etc.

b) The ending *er* is written with  $\xi$  in the Imperfect of the Verbs of the First Conjugation (Infinitive  $-E_L$ ):  $l_{\mu} \mu ou \xi_{\mu} (k \partial \chi \bar{o} s \bar{e} r)$  he was speaking. It is written with E in the Plural of all Nouns:  $l_{\mu} f \mu E_{\mu} (kiner)$  women;  $\delta m f m E_{\mu} e f m n \bar{u} kner$ ) children, — and in the Past Participle of the Verbs of the First Conjugation:  $\mu ou E_{\mu} E_{\mu} (x \bar{o} s er y em)$  I have spoken;  $E \ell_{\mu} E_{\mu} E_{\mu} (y e ker y en)$  they have come.

c) Medial  $\mathbf{k}$  sounding like  $\mathbf{\xi}$  is a source of mistakes. Write  $\mathbf{k}$  not  $\mathbf{\xi}$ :

Before two consonants which belong to the stem: עַבּקַצַ (verğ) end; לקוועל (hraješt) farewell; לא קועל (t'ert') newspaper;

In penultimate and antepenultimate syllables: µերան (beran) mouth; µեղեցիկ (gerecik) beautiful; Հայերէն (hayeren) Armenian language; Before labials  $u_i$ ,  $u_i$ :  $\delta L u_i$  (zep<sup>5</sup>) plaster,  $u L u_i$  (sep) peak, wedge.

Exceptions: dfu (vep) fiction, novel; dpfu (vrep) mistake;  $\eta fup (depk')$  event.

7. a) The use of  $\xi$  is very restricted at the beginning of words. With  $\xi$  begin:  $\xi = (\bar{e}ak)$  being;  $\xi = (\bar{e}g)$  female;  $\xi = f_{e}(\bar{e}g)$  female;  $\xi = (\bar{e}g)$  ass;  $\xi = (\bar{e}g)$  page.

b) Write  $\xi$  not h:

1) At the end of words:  $\mu uq \xi$  (bazē) falcon;  $\mu uq \xi$  (ropē) minute;  $\zeta uug \xi$  (hascē) address;

2) <u>Ablative</u> Sing. and Plur.: q = m b f (getnē) from earth;  $\delta h n_{\rho} h n f$  (žeřk<sup>e</sup>erē) from hands (6 a).

3) The Third Person Singular Present and the Imperfect of the First Conjugation. (See 6, b.)

4) The following most usual words:

աղէկ	aγēk	well	հրաւէր	hravēr	invitation
աղէտ	ayēt	disaster	Sptz	hrēš	monster
ամ էն	amĕn	1)all 2)amen	र्दे हि	žēt	oil
անէծը	anēżk'	curse	ılfy	mēk	one
45 <i>\bar{b}</i>	gēť	at least	аţğ	mēğ	in
452	gēš	bad	նուէր	nə vēr	gift
45p	gēr	fat	25up	šēnk'	building
459	dēz	heap	5972	čezok'	neuter
<u> </u>	dēmk'	face	պարտէղ	partēz	garden
երէկ	y <b>er</b> ēk	yesterday	щĘи	pēs	like
երէց	, y <i>er</i> ēċ	) senior	պէտը	pētk	need
2 > 0	•	<sup>2</sup> ) priest	utp	sēr	love
<del>ዋ</del> է የሆ	zēnk'	arms	455	vēġ	discussion
Ĩŧţ	ťēy	tea	451	vēm	rock
<i>मिर्दे आर्ट ज</i>	t'ēpēt	although	Ĩţŗŧ	vē <b>r</b> k'	wound
ð Eu	żēs	rite, cere-	4150	vrēj	revenge
-		mony	int q.	tëg	pike
450	kēs	half	տէր	tēr	lord, master
կէտ	kēt	point	քարտէս	k'a <b>rt</b> ēs	map
St∉	hēk'	miserable	0 μ ξύ μ	ōrēnk'	law

The loss of the tenues makes difficult both the spelling and the pronounciation, because the original orthography of Armenian words is preserved but the words are not pronounced accordingly.

Students must learn meaning and spelling together. This is the surest way of avoiding orthographic mistakes. The following directions may prove to be helpful.

# ORTHOGRAPHIC RULES — ՈՒՂ<u>ՂԱԳՐԱԿԱՆ</u> ԿԱՆՈՆՆԵՐ

5. Final  $\mu$  must be followed by a mute j.  $\delta \mu n \mu j (\dot{z} \dot{a} \dot{r} \bar{a})$  servant, slave;  $\rho \mu \dot{z} \mu \dot{u} \mu \mu j (\dot{k} \dot{a} han \bar{a})$  priest.

Exceptions: a) m 4m (aha) behold ! 4mmm (hapa) well! come now! then! mmm (apa) then; mm (sa) this; mmm (da) that; 5mm (na) he, she, it; mmmm (asika) this one; mmmm (dika) that one; mmmm (anika) the third one; 4mmm (hima) now.

b) The Imperatives: *µµµµµ' (karda)* read (2nd Person Singular) *µµµµ' (xara)* play; *µµµ' (gana)* go, etc.

c) The Proper Names: U.S.E.p.hum (Amerika) America; В. рищи (Europa) Europe, etc.

6. a) The vowel  $\underline{k}$  never stands at the end;  $\underline{\xi}$  always does. The ending *en* is written with  $\underline{k}$  in Verbs (3rd Person Plural, Present Indicative):  $\underline{\mu}_{\underline{\mu}} \underline{\mu}_{\underline{\mu}} \underline{\mu}_{\underline{\nu}} \underline{\mu}_{\underline{\nu}} (k \partial p aren)$  they dance. It is written with  $\underline{\xi}$  in Nouns (Ablative of Singular and Plural with the Definite Article)  $\underline{\mu}_{\underline{\mu}} \underline{\mu}_{\underline{\mu}} \underline{\mu}_{\underline{\nu}} \underline{\xi}_{\underline{\nu}} (k^{c} a_{\gamma} a k^{c} \bar{e}n)$  from the town;  $\underline{\mu}_{\underline{\mu}} \underline{\mu}_{\underline{\mu}} \underline{\mu}_{\underline{\nu}} \underline{\mu}_{\underline{\mu}} \underline{\mu}} \underline{\mu}_{\underline{\mu}} \underline{\mu}} \underline{\mu}_{\underline{\mu}} \underline{\mu}$ 

b) The ending *er* is written with  $\xi$  in the Imperfect of the Verbs of the First Conjugation (Infinitive  $-E_L$ ):  $l_{\mu}$  [woufp ( $k \partial \chi \bar{o} s \bar{e} r$ ) he was speaking. It is written with E in the Plural of all Nouns:  $l_{\mu}E_{\mu}$  (kiner) women;  $s'min-l_{\mu}E_{\mu}$  (manūkner) children, — and in the Past Participle of the Verbs of the First Conjugation: [woufp  $E_{a}$  (x $\bar{o}ser$  yem) I have spoken;  $E_{\mu}E_{\mu}$   $E_{\mu}$  (yeker yen) they have come.

c) Medial  $\mathbf{k}$  sounding like  $\boldsymbol{\xi}$  is a source of mistakes. Write  $\mathbf{k}$  not  $\boldsymbol{\xi}$ :

Before two consonants which belong to the stem: אַשָּל (verğ) end; געשול (hraješt) farewell; אַשּל (t'ert') newspaper;

In penultimate and antepenultimate syllables: physic (beran) mouth; nhnhghl (gerecik) beautiful;  $\leq m_j h_j \leq i$  (hayeren) Armenian language;

Before labials  $u_i$ ,  $u_i$ :  $\delta L u_i$  (*żep*<sup>5</sup>) plaster,  $u L u_i$  (*sep*) peak, wedge.

Exceptions: dfm(vep) fiction, novel; dpfm(vrep) mistake; nfmp(depk') event.

7. a) The use of  $\xi$  is very restricted at the beginning of words. With  $\xi$  begin:  $\xi \mu q$  ( $\bar{e}ak$ ) being;  $\xi q$  ( $\bar{e}g$ ) female;  $\xi d_{e}$  ( $\bar{e}mk'$ ) keyhole;  $\xi z$  ( $\bar{e}s$ ) ass;  $\xi g$  ( $\bar{e}g$ ) page.

b) Write  $\xi$  not h:

1) At the end of words: μμηξ (bazē) falcon; μπηξ (ropē) minute; ζμημξ (hascē) address;

2) <u>Ablative</u> Sing. and Plur.: *q.L.mul.f. (getnē)* from earth; *&Ln.plpf. (žerk<sup>s</sup>erē)* from hands (6 a).

3) The Third Person Singular Present and the Imperfect of the First Conjugation. (See 6, b.)

4) The following most usual words:

աղէկ	aγēk	well	Հրաւէր	hravēr	invitation
աղէտ	ayēt	disaster	らっちょ	hrēš	monster
ամէն	amēn	1)all 2)amen	るより	žēť	oil
անէծը	anēżk'	curse	s Èų	mēk	one
45B	gēt'	at least	зęб	mēğ	in
452	gēš	bad	նուէր	nə vēr	gift
450	gēr	fat	չէնք	šēnk'	building
459	dēz	heap	25978	čezok'	neuter
դ <b>էմ</b> ք	dēmkʿ	face	պարտէզ	partēz	garden
ÈŋţÌ	y <b>er</b> ēk	yesterday	պէս –	pēs	like
երէց	yerēć	) senior	պէտը	pētk'	need
0		<sup>2</sup> ) priest	utp	sēr	love
ባይካይ	zēnk`	arms	458	vēġ	discussion
ĨŦţ,	ťēy	tea	<i>न्</i> द्र	vēm	rock
சித்யுதன	t'ēpēt	although	- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - -	vērk	wound
бĘц	żēs	rite, cere-	Jptt	vrēj	revenge
-		mony	intq.	tëg	pike
45.0	kēs	half	տէր	tēr	lord, master
រុំដូ៣	kē <b>t</b>	point	քարտէս	k'artēs	map
÷ξę	hēk'	miserable	optue	ō <b>rēnk</b> `	law

8. No mistakes should be made for initial *n* and *o*, for the first is pronounced *vo* (see the exceptions 2 c) and the latter  $\bar{o}$ . The only initial *vo* written not with *n* but with dn is in the word dn ddm du (vohmak) flock of wolves.

9. Mistakes in medial n which sounds like  $\bar{o}$  can be avoided by learning the most usual words written with o:

աղօթք	ayốt <sup>°</sup> k°	prayer	Som	hōt	flock
шцош	ayōt	obscure, dim	ส่อน	žōn	gift
เมเรื่อ 🗗	amöt`	shame	ரீலா	<i>m</i> ōt	near
แท้เอโฮ	anōt'	vase	<u> </u>	hōd	1) article (in
անօխի	anōt'i	hungry	0 L		grammar)
шпшлот	aravōt	morning			<sup>2</sup> ) joint (in
արտօնել	artōnel	to allow			the body)
шрот –	a <b>r</b> ōt	pasture	յօԺար	hōja <b>r</b>	willing
шрор	arōr	plough	ງວນຼົ	hōnk'	eyebrow
դօտի	gōti	girdle, belt	յօրանջել	hōran-	to yawn
न्ए०२	d <b>r</b> ōš	flag		ğel	
եօթը	yōt ə	seven	յօրինել	hōrinel	to make, to
pront	χōsk <sup>*</sup>	speech,			fashion
		sentence	նօսը	nösr	thin, rare
ծանօթ	zanōt`	1) known,	-		
		²) acquain-	նօտար	nōtar	notary
		tance	շօչափել	šōšap'el	to touch
կարօտ	karōt	desire; need	պաչտօն	paštōn	office, ser-
կտրօն	kətrōn	coupon			vice
կըօն	krōn	religion	պարե–	paregōt	tunic
40214	kōšik	shoe	фот		
Համա–	hamarō	t short	тоF	tōť	heat
11.0 <i>1</i> 11			เกอโเ	tōn	feast
Śąoŗ	həzō <b>r</b>	might	9° L	ĊŌγ	dew

Write with  $\bar{o}$  also the Genitive and Dative Singular of  $\mathcal{L}_{ujp}$ (hayr) father;  $\mathcal{L}_{ujp}$  (mayr) mother;  $\mathcal{L}_{qpuyp}$  (yerbayr) brother:  $\mathcal{L}_{op}$  (h $\bar{o}r$ ),  $\mathcal{L}_{op}$  (m $\bar{o}r$ ),  $\mathcal{L}_{qpop}$  (yerb $\bar{o}r$ ).

10. The labials  $d_{\perp}$  and  $l_{\perp}$  have now almost the same pronunciation (v), but a constant rule dominates their use:

a) No word starts with  $\iota$ ;

b)  $\mu'$  is never used in the same stem after the vowels  $\mu$ ,  $\mu$ ,  $\mu$ , but always  $\iota$  ( $\mu \iota$ ,  $\mu \iota$ ,  $\mu \iota$ );

The syllable "ov" is written nd, thus:  $\delta nd (zov)$  sea; lnnnd (korov) basket; lnd (kov) cow.

11. A neat pronunciation will help to avoid mistakes in using  $\mu$  and  $\mu$ .

a) No original Armenian word starts with *n* or *p*. The Armenian language prefers to have them be preceded by  $\mathcal{L}(\mathcal{L}_n, \mathcal{L}_p)$ , *m*, *L*. But there are some borrowed foreign words starting with *n* or *p*:

ռաբբի	rabbi	rabbi	ռոմիկ	roġik	salary
ռաղմ	<i>razm</i>	battle	ռումբ	<i></i> rūmb	shell
пшч	rah	way	ռունդ	ŕūng	nose
ռամ իկ	ramik	vulgar	րոպէ	<b>r</b> opē	minute
ռիչտ	<i>rišt</i>	sordid, niggard			

b) In Classic Armenian n is used before a radical  $\mathcal{U}$ . The Modern Armenian keeps spelling n, although the  $\mathcal{U}$  has disappeared:

<u>n</u> .nln	Classic:	դուռն	dūr(ən)	door
ամառ	Classic:	ամառն	amar(ən)	summer
ล้เป็นก	Classic:	<i>โป แกโเ</i>	žəmer(ən)	winter
ծեռբ	Classic:	<i>ձեռ</i> ն	žerk' (žerən)	hand
part	Classic:	բուռն	būr(ən)	fist; hand
լեռ	Classic:	` լեռն	ler(ən)	mountain
Թոռ	Classic:	[Ժոռն	ťor(ən)	grandchild

12. Initial  $\leq$  and  $_J$  have the same pronunciation; they are a source of mistakes. Here, some help:

a) No words have initial J followed by consonants. Therefore the breath with a following consonant is always 4 not J, except:

JTEL	hərel	to send
JTL	həri	pregnant
17461	həykel	to polish
յղփանուլ	hər p`anal	to be stuffed
յստակ	həstak	clear

b) The breath with a following vowel can be  $\leq$  or  $_J$ . In order to eliminate mistakes, learn the usual words starting with  $_J$  + a vowel:

յախճապակի	hazġapaki	porcelain
յախուռն	hazūrən	overhasty
յածանաւ	hażanav	cruiser
յակինթ	hakint	hyacinth
» ՀՀ Հ յաղ[ժել	hayt'el	to conquer
յաճախ	haġay	often
յամառ	hamař	stubborn
յամ ը	hamər	dumb, slow
յայտնի	haytni	clear
յանդ	hang	rhyme, cadence
յանդուղն	handûgən	bold
յանկարծ	hankarż	suddenly
ຶ່ງພົນຂຶ້ນຕໍ່ງ	hanžnel	to remit, give
յանցանը	hanċank'	fault
յապաղել	hapayel	to defer
าารู่การ์	hağor	successful
յառաջ	harağ	forward
յառել	harel	to gaze on
յասմիկ	hasmik	jasmin
յատակ	hatak	bottom, pavement
յատուկ	hatūk	proper, own
J‴['	har	always
յալող	harg	price, value
յաըկ	hark	floor
յարձակիլ	haržakil	to attack
յարմար	ha <b>rm</b> ar	suitable
յարուԹիւն	harūt`yun	resurrection
յաւելուած	havelvaż	appendix, addenda
յաւիտեան	havityan	eternal
յափչտակել	hap`eštakel	to rob, to snatch
յեղաչըջել	heyašərğel	to turn upside down
յեղափոխել	herap'oyel	-
յեղափոխութիւն	heyap'oyūt'yun	revolution
յենարան	henaran	support

յետ, յետոյ	het, hetõ	after, behind
յերիւրել	heryurel	to invent, imagine
յիմար	himar	fool
រ[រ] រ[រ]រ]រ]រ]រ]រ]រ]រ]រ]រ]រ]រ]រ]រ]រ]រ]រ	hišel	to remember
յիսուն	hisūn	fifty
8 իսուս	hisūs	Jesus
յոբեյեան	hobelyan	jubilee
յողնիլ	hognil	to get tired
յոդնակի	hognaki	plural
յոլսորտալ	hoxortal	to boast
յոյղ, յուղում	huyz, hūzũm	emotion
յուղուիլ	hūzvil	to get excited
Յոյն	huyn	Greek
្រុករួម	huys	hope
յոպոպ	hopop	hoopoe
jnnh	hori	bad
្វ័កជ័យជូ	hovaz	panther
յովատակ	hovatak	stallion
יב וייניק	hord	abundant
յորդոր	hordor	exhortation
յորձանք	horžank	stream, current
្រាកក្រក	hūlis	July
յուղարկաւո–	hūŗarkavorū-	funeral
րութիւն	t'yun	
յունիս	hūnis	June
յունուար	hūnvar	January
յուչիկ	<b>h</b> ūšik	softly
jninnif	hūrūť	charm, spell
้ เกเกเฮิท	hūrt`i	full, fertile
јоц (псшб)	hōd(vaż)	article; (paper)
jodun	hōjar	willing
່ງວິມຼ	hōnkʻ	eyebrows
յօչուտել	hōšotel	to tear in pieces
ງດົກພາຍຊີ້ຍົງ	hōranğel	to yawn
յօրինել	hōrinel	to compose, to make,
		[to fashion

# THE PROBLEM OF VOICED AND VOICELESS CONSONANTS

13. As noted above, the tenues and the mediae represent the real problem of the Armenian orthography. Students would write **uptuff** for **uptuff** for **uptuff** for **uptuff**. honor. It is most important to learn every Armenian word with the proper spelling, for the modern (west) pronunciation is of no help to the right spelling. Students will derive some help from the following rules:

14. Consonants of the same degree — (voiced plus voiced, unvoiced plus unvoiced, aspirate plus aspirate) — and also unvoiced plus aspirate can stand together in a stem. But the voiced consonants tolerate neither the aspirates nor the unvoiced consonants.

15. The voiceless sibilants  $u, \xi$  are followed by  $u_l, l_l, u_l$ or  $u_l, \varrho, \rho$ ; the voiced sibilants q and d are followed by  $\mu, q, q$ . Accordingly, spell:

<i>₩ႢŦ</i>	azg	nation	դդում	dədüm	pumpkin
<i>""11</i>	azd	notice	[] [] กา	ť əť ū	sour
шиш	ast	here	<u>9</u> 4‴L	∂zgal	to feel

Note: There is a word uquul which is read solution mourn, from the stem unuq (sūg).

16. The liquids  $\eta$ ,  $\rho$  are followed by  $\xi$ ,  $\delta$ . The voiceless spirant  $\rho$  is followed by  $\xi$ , g and in general by voiceless and aspirate consonants. Write:

աղջիկ բաղձանք արծաԹ	arğik baržank' arżat'	girl desire silver	վարձ <sub>֎</sub> վերջ արծարծ!	verğ	wages end <i>l</i> to kindle
Exception	ns:				
զեղչ Հարց տրցակ	zerč harć tərčak	qı	scount; but lestion, prol undle, buncl	olem	γğ contri- [tion

17. The  $\Sigma$  is followed by q, q,  $\delta$  and  $l_{1}$ , m,  $\delta$ , never by the aspirates  $(q, \beta, g)$ . Write:

Թանդ	<i>t</i> °ang or	Թանկ	ť ank	expensive
գունդ	gund or	գունտ	günt	globe
գանկ	gank or	դանդ	gang	skull
խնջոյք	<i>χənğuyk</i> `or	խնճոյք	χənġuyk <sup>°</sup>	party, banquet
եռանդ	yerand	zeal		
խունկ	χūnk	incense		
	anž	person		
Ժանտ	jant	wicked		

Note: Words like  $4\hbar\omega h_{\ell}$  (kyank') life,  $\omega u_{\ell} \omega h_{\ell}$  (aprank') merchandise,  $4\omega h_{\ell}$  (vank') monastery,  $4\mu h_{\ell} \mu_{m} \omega h_{\ell}$  (maxit'arank) consolation, and others are not exceptions, because their  $\ell$  is a suffix not belonging to the stem (see 56).

18. The shifting of consonants has influenced the writing, and some originally wrong spelling alternates now with the right spelling:  $2m \ln q$  (sand) lightning, also  $2m \ln d$ ;  $\ln \ln q$  ( $\chi$ end) fool, also  $\ln \ln d d$ .

19. The *i* is followed by  $\mu$ ,  $\mu$  (not  $\mu$ ). Write:

ամբողջ Համբոյը ամբ օւ ամպ ումպ	ambo <sub>ř</sub> ğ hambuyr amb, amp ūmp	whole kiss cloud sip
Exceptions:		
ամփոփ	amp`op`	recollected
չամփուր	šamp'ūr	spit (to grill meat)

20. The q can be preceded by the consonants q, d, q,  $\tilde{\nu}$ , p; it can be followed by the consonants d,  $\tilde{\nu}$ , n, p, q, L, d, q.

#### ALTERNATION AND SUPPRESSION OF VOWELS AND DIPHTHONGS

21. The vowels h, nL,  $\xi$  and the diphthongs  $n_j$ , hm, final hL are subject to alternation.

The vowels *n*<sub>L</sub> and p are suppressed when they lose the accent by addition of a new syllable. In their place, p ( $\vartheta$ ) is pronounced but not written.

The vowel  $\xi$  is changed into  $\mu$ , the diphthongs  $n_j$  into  $n_L$ , *hum* into *h*, and final  $\mu_L$  into  $n_L$  with the same reason — loss of the accent.

22. Medial -h is suppressed for loss of accent:

uhpun (sirt) heart; upunh (sərti) of the heart; upunuhhg (sərtakić) an intimate (friend) [author ημρ (gir) letter; ημε<sub>1</sub> (gərel) to write; ημωηξω (graget) writer, μσμ<sub>2</sub>μ (bəjišk) physician; μσ<sub>2</sub>μωμω<sup>2</sup> (bəjəškakan) medical; μ<sub>μ</sub>σμ<sub>2</sub>μ<sub>μ</sub><sub>1</sub> (bəjəškel) to heal.

23. Initial / is not suppressed:

μ<sub>μ</sub> (ir) thing; μ<sub>μ</sub>μμ<sub>μ</sub>μ<sub>μ</sub> (irakan) real; μ<sub>μ</sub>μ<sub>μ</sub> (irer) things

μηά (irž) desire; μηάμμ (iržer) desires, but: μηάμμ (držal) to desire

 $h_{L_{2}}(in\check{c})$  what;  $h_{L_{2}}h^{\circ}(in\check{c}i)$  or  $h_{L_{2}}n^{\circ}L(in\check{c}i)$  of what; why?

huze (inčk') possessions; huze [nišk'er], but: puze (dnčaka'γč) avaricious

μuá (inž) leopard; μuáμ (inžer) leopards, but: μuáπμημ (dnžūjd) giraffe.

24. The h of the suffixes  $-h l_{\ell}$  (diminutive particle), -h e,  $-h l_{\ell}$ , is not suppressed:

**25.** The final h of monosyllables is not suppressed:  $\delta h$  (*ži*) horse;  $\delta h h$  (*žier*) horses.

26. The  $m_{\rm e}$  is suppressed when it loses the accent by derivations; it may be suppressed in declensions:

ипърн (sūrb) clean, holy; ирны (sərbel) to clean ирнат [əhuu (sərbūt'yun) holiness, Holy Communion. But the Genitive of ипърн may be ипърны (sūrbi) or ирны (sərbi).

27. However, initial and final  $n_{\perp}$  is not suppressed:  $n_{\perp} \partial p_{\perp} (\bar{u}t^{\circ} \partial)$  eight,  $n_{\perp} \partial h_{\mu} p_{\mu} p_{\mu} (\bar{u}t^{\circ} erord)$  the eighth  $\mu_{\mu} p_{\mu} (kat\bar{u})$  cat,  $\mu_{\mu} p_{\mu} p_{\mu} (kat\bar{u}en)$  from the cat

**28.** Initial *m* is changed into  $\partial$ :

ունդ (ând) pulse, ընդեղէն (ənderēn) kinds of pulse ունպ (āmp) sip, ընպել (əmpel) to drink

**29.** The  $\xi$  is changed into h when the accent is lost in derivations:

45 u (kēs) half, 4 hub (kisel) to divide

Հանդէս (handes) feast, Հանդիսական (handisakan) solemn

"Jp (ser) to love, "ppt (sirel) to love

Exceptions:

մէկ (mēk) one, մէկական (mēkakan) one or each

יחלף (tēr) lord, master, הלף הנה (tērūt'yun) lordship, empire בין אין (hrēš) monster, לון בה לאונה (hrēšūt'yun) monstrosity

**30.** In declensions, the  $\xi$  both medial and final, does not alternate. (The medial  $\xi$  does in Classic Armenian.)

\$\$ spurfy (hraver) invitation. Verbal derivation: \$\$ purfypt[(hravirel) to invite. Declined: \$\$ purfypt (hraveri) of the invitation

պատուէը (patvēr) command, պատուիրել (patvirel) to command պատուէրի (patvēri) of the command

unche (novēr) gift, unchent (novirel) to give, unchent (novēri) of the gift

մարդարէ (margarē) prophet, մարդարէներ (margarēner) prophets, մարդարէութիւն (margarēūt'yun) prophecy

**31.** The vowels  $\boldsymbol{\mu}$  and  $\boldsymbol{n}$  are not suppressed as a rule, but suppressions occur in Modern Armenian due to the fact that classic words are often shortened:

**emque** (k'arak') town Genitive: emqmel (k'ayak'i) or emqel (k'ayk'i) emqmemgh (k'arak'aci) or emqengh (k'arkaci) citizen բերան (beran) mouth Genitive: phpmhh (berani) or phphh (berni) [membun] (lavanal) or [mebun] (lavnal) to recover Junnale (jorovel) or Jungale (jorvel) to gather undanhi (sovorit) to get accustomed, (hence) underhi (sovril) and with metathesis, "thur for (sorvil) to lear PAPESTI ORME AN INCOMING LELKESTAN 17 1112 Barris 6. Terefori. ULI - J; 5 1-12 Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

32. The final diphthong  $m_j$  may or may not be suppressed in declensions:

ψέωωμ (p<sup>\*</sup>esā) groom Genitive: ψέωωμμ (p<sup>\*</sup>esayi) or ψέωμ (p<sup>\*</sup>esi) of a groom Ablative: ψέωωμμ (p<sup>\*</sup>esayē) from a groom  $\overline{s}$ ωθμωμμ (gambā) way Ablative:  $\overline{s}$ ωθμωμμ (gambayē) or  $\overline{s}$ ωθμμ (gambē) from a way μημμ (tərā) boy, child Genitive: μημμμ (tərayi) or μημ (təri), μημι (tərū) of a child

33. The diphthong nj is changed into ni in derivations, but not in declensions, unless the word is declined in the classic manner: jnju (huys) hope, jniumi (hūsāl) to hope
Genitive: Modern jnjuh (huysi), Classic jniunj (hūsō) of a hope [nju (luys) light, [niuminp (lūsavor) bright
Genitive: Modern [njuh (luysi), Classic [niunj (lūsō) of a light Exception: linju (nuyn) same, identical linjumiumi (nuynanal) to be identified

35. The final diphthong *Luy* is changed into *f* in derivations only (in Classic Armenian in declensions also):

ephumnuhung (k<sup>s</sup>ristonyā) a christian ephumnuhunu (k<sup>s</sup>ristonēakan) Catechism, Christian Genitive: Modern ephumnuhungh (k<sup>s</sup>ristonyai)

Classic ephumnusp (k'ristonei)

18

# ALTERNATIONS OF CONSONANTS

**36.** Before  $\mu$  the  $\nu$  may alternate with u, and  $\mu$  may alternate with  $\mu$  after u (see 19):

անբիծ (anbiż) or ամբիծ (ambiż) stainless ամբարիչտ (ambarišt) or անպարիչտ (anparišt) impious, godless

37. The liquid n before  $\mathbf{\hat{u}}$  may alternate with p when the  $\mathbf{\hat{u}}$  moves away from n (in Classic Armenian):  $\mathbf{uufunt}(amarn)$  summer

Genitive: *ud upuuu* (amaran), *ud upuuu* (amaranoč) summer house The modern language does not respect this alternation. Having thrown the  $\tilde{\nu}$  off the stem, it keeps the *n* throughout derivations and declensions:

шишп (amar), Genitive шишппши (amarvan) qппп (dür) Classic qппи door, Genitive qпши (dran)

SYLLABIFICATION - SAQUAUPS

**38.** A word has as many syllables as it has vowels or diph-thongs:

	սար	sar	mountain
	Հովիտ	hovit	valley
3)	առազաստ	aragast	sail
	եռամեայ	yeramyā	3 years old
	մատենազիր	matenagir	author, writer
5)	բարեգործութիւն	baregorżūť vun	beneficence

39. Rules for dividing the syllables:

a) Do not divide the monosyllables:

٠.

վունկ սիւն խոյն կոււ	vank syun t`uyn kav	syllable column poison clay	սեւ ծայր Թիւ սուտ	sev żayr t`iv sūt	black end, edge number lie
: Divid	le two	vowels:			
5-11-41		ē-a-ka	n	essenti	al
mp-L-	y l pp	ti-ye-z	erk	univers	e

The consonant between two vowels is written and pro-

תע-בוליגל ע-šim intelligent עש-שש-פו-ען ka-ta-ryal perfect

d) Of two consonants between two vowels the first is written and pronounced with the foregoing, the second with the following vowel:

Հան–գիստ	han-gist	rest
ղառ–նալ	dar-nal	to return
միջ-նոր-դու-Թիւն	miğ-nor-dū-t`yun	mediation

e) Do not separate a voiceless consonant from a following liquid (p, L, l, q, n). They are written and pronounced to-gether with the following vowel:

մա–ըրու–Թիւն	ma-k <sup>°</sup> rū-t <sup>°</sup> yun	cleanness
չա–ղա–կրատ	ša-γa-krat	chatterer
ա–կռայ	a-krā	tooth
ա–քլոր	a-k`lor	cock
w-wph1	a-pril	to live; April

f) Of three consonants between two vowels the first two are written and pronounced with the foregoing, the third with the following vowel:

,

Հանդ–չիլ	hang-čil	to rest
Թարդ–ման	t`arg-man	interpreter
պոռԹ–կալ	port'-kal	to roar
պաչտ–պան	pašt-pan	defender

However, if the third consonant is a liquid, the last two join the following:

բար–ձրա–գոյն	bar-žra-guyn	highest
աս–տղա–լից	as-tra-liċ	full of stars

g) The pronounced but not written  $\underline{\mu}$  between two consonants makes a syllable and, in case of hyphen, is written:

թըչ–նա–մի	t`əš-na-mi	foe
ըն–կըղ–միլ	ən-kəy-mil	to sink
<i>փըը–փըա–</i> ղէլ՝	p`ər-p`ra-dēz	foaming
h) Do not separate	the consonant from	a following diphthong:
վա–ղուան	va-yvan	tomorrow's
ш—дпспр	a-yvor	nice

ար–դեօբ	ar-dyōk`	perhaps, is it?
ան–ցեալ	an-cyal	past

i) The vowel  $n_{L}$ , when it sounds like  $(\partial v)$ , is written  $\underline{P}^{L}$  for syllabification:

<i>տпւшւ == տրւ<b>-</b>ш</i> ւ	təv-av	he gave
Թուական _	ť v-a-kan	numeral
երը-ա-կան		
j) Separate L from a	foregoing liqu	ıid :
գին-ւոյ	gin-vō	of wine

ining-ing tar-vo of the year

But do not separate  $rac{1}{2}$  from other consonants nor from the vowel with which it forms a diphthong:

Classic:

4n-q.Lnj	ho-gvõ	of the soul
որ–դւոյ	vor-dvō	of the son
Հիւ–անդ	hiv-and	sick
երկ-նաւ-որ	yerk-nav-or	celestial, heavenly

Note: The ending ry is Genitive Case in Classic Armenian; the modern language prefers h/h (see 71 b, 72 b).

k) A compound word may be divided into its elements:

բան-ա-ստեղծ	ban-a-sterż	poet (literally: creator of ideas)
យ្យម–ក្រប់ក្នុប	ays-ink`ən	it means (literally: this same)
մեծ–արել	meż-arel	to honor (literally: to make great)

# PUNCTUATION — ԿԻՏԱԳՐՈՒԹԻՒՆ

**40.** The signs of punctuation in Armenian differ from the signs used in English:

a) The period is signified with two points (:) called *dbp?ulfun (verğakēt*).

b) One point (.), which is called  $l_{l}f_{m}$  (ket) or  $d_{l}f_{m}l_{l}f_{m}$  (miğaket), corresponds to the colon (:) or semicolon (;) in English.

c) For the comma (,) in English, the Armenian has the same sign (,) called *umnpulfun* (storakēt), or, in some instances:

d) The  $\mu n \ell d$   $(b \bar{u} t^{c})$  ('). This sign serves often as division mark between two words of a sentence; it can be substituted by a  $\eta h \delta$  (g i z) = dash. The  $\mu n \ell d$  signifies also an omitted but an easily understood word. Examples:

Ամերիկայի՝ բոլոր ազդերուն ըրած օդնուԹիւնները ան-Համար են

Amerikayi' bolor azgerūn əraż ögnūt'yunnerə anhamar yen The relief rendered by America to all nations is immense.

Without the  $\mu n \mu \beta$ , the sentence could also mean:

The relief rendered by all the nations of America.

Քոակները դրամով լեցուն էին, բաժակները՝ գինիով, որտերը՝ ցնծութեամբ

k'əsaknerə dramov lecūn ēin, bajaknerə' (here is understood lecūn ēin) giniov, sərterə (lēcun ēin) cənzūt'yamb

The purses were full of money; the glasses, of wine; the hearts, of joy.

e) The question mark in Armenian is  $\mu_{\mu}\mu_{\eta}\mu_{l}$  (paruyk) (°) and has its place over the last syllable of the word in question:

4

U.juop qupping quipp<sup>o</sup>p (aysor doproc gacir) Did you go to school today?

U, juop qupper<sup>®</sup>g quughp (the question mark over daproc) Is it to school that you went today?

*lk,μo<sup>®</sup> μ μμμηg μμgμμ* (the question mark over *aysōr*) Is it today that you went to school?

f) The Armenian exclamation point is  $L_{\mu}\mu_{\mu}p$  (yerkar) placed over the last syllable of a word:

երանի՞ ձեղի	yerani žezi	how happy you are	!
huð hí	inżi	to me!	
ի՞նչ Հեղնանը	inč hegnank <sup>°</sup>	what irony!	

g) The accent *μμ* (šešt) is used to stress a syllable or a word: *μμμ* (*k* ezi' ē χōsk'əs) I am addressing you!

h) The *dim lum q b* (*p'akagiz*) corresponds to parenthesis ( ), [ ].

i) The quotation marks are called support (čakert).

j) The suspension points (...) have their equivalent in μωμαθωίω μξωπωρ (kaχman kēter).

k) The *mumufampy* (apat'arc) ('), apostrophe, denotes the suppression of a vowel.

h'putu (k'dsem) for hp putu (kd dsem) I say

l) The hyphen (-) is called בעקשולעשון (yent'amnā) in case of syllabification and שווה קראש עורא (miūt'yan giż) in case of uniting two words.

m) The dash (--) is called also **mugumuluu qho** (anğatman giż).

#### ACCENTUATION - 3658

**41.** a) Every Armenian polysyllabic word is stressed on the last syllable:

ապո'ւչ	apūš	stupid!
ապերա՛ խտ	aperaχt	ungrateful!
յաւիտենակա՛ն	havitenakan	eternal!
<i>֎աղա</i> քավարուԹի՛ւն	k`ayak`avarūt`yun	politen <b>e</b> ss!

Note: Hence, it is wrong to stress the penult of the Armenian names: wrong: **Umpmppn'ubmu** (Martiro'syan)

right: Մարտիրոսեա'ն (Martirosya'n)

b) Some two-syllabic Adverbs may have the accent on the first syllable:

գո'նէ	go'nē	at least
	gū'ċē	perhaps
ա'րդեօք	a' <b>r</b> dyōk`	is it?
դա՛րձեալ	da' <b>r</b> žyal	again
ա՛յսօր	a'ysōr	today
նո'յնչափ	nu'ynčapʻ	as much (as)
ի'նչպէս	i'nčpēs	how
ա՛յսպէս	a'yspēs	this way, so
ո' ը չափ	vo' <b>r</b> čap`	howmuch
<i>₽Է</i> ′ <i>ѣ⊾</i>	ťē'yev	although
Թէ'պէտ	t`ē'pēt	annougn
4 [ <sup>1</sup> 6']#5	gre't <sup>°</sup> ē	almost

c) The Ordinal Numbers stress the first syllable when their stems are monosyllabic Cardinals:

վե՛ց–երորդ ջսա՛ն–երորդ	ve'ċerord k`sa'nerord	sixth twentieth
d) The Vocatives	may be stressed	on the first syllable:
մա'յրիկ	ma'yrik Ma'riam	mamma!
Մա՛րիամ	mariam	Mary!

e) The half vowel  $\underline{r}$  is always unaccented. If it is pronounced between the last two consonants of a word, the last accented syllable is the foregoing full vowel:

րնտանի՛ քս	əntani'k`əs	my family
	kʿa'ŗċər	sweet

#### CAPITALIZATION — ԳԼԽԱԳԻՐ

42. With Capitals begin:

a) A Sentence, a Line of Verse, a Quotation;

b) Proper Nouns with their Historical Attributes:

Տիգրան Մեծ	Tigran Meż	Tigran the Great
Խոսրով Կոտակ	Xosrov Kotak	Khosrov the Little
Հայկ Դիւցազն	Haik Dyučazən	Haik the Hero
Սուրբ Սահակ	Sürb Sahak	Holy Sahak

c) Titles of books, names of famous artistic works: Buptunghh Ammunic full Zugng

(Xorenacii Patmūt'yun Hayoc) Khorenazi's History of Armenia

# Այվաղովսկիի Փոթորիկը

(Ayvazovskii P'ot'orika) Ayvazovski's Storm (Painting)

d) <b>Г</b> -п-	dū	thou
Դութ	dūkʻ	you
But do not capitalize: Lu	yes	I
e) Religious Terms:		
Աստուած	Astvaż	God
Սուրբ Կոյս	Sūrb Kuys	Holy Virgin
Աստուածածին	Astvażażin	Mother of God
Տիրամայր	Tiramayr	Mother of Our Lord

# PART FIRST — ሆርሀኒ じቡርዲኑኒ WORDS AND FORMS - ՁԵՒԱԽՕՍՈՒԹԻՒՆ

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2011

Note: Words are divided into eight Parts of Speech; Nouns Adjectives (including Participles), Pronouns, Verbs, Adverbs, Prepositions, Conjunctions and Interjections.

Nouns and Pronouns are inflected to denote gender, number and case. Verbs are inflected to denote voice, mood, tense, number and person.

The inflection of Nouns is called Declension: Nouns are declined.

The inflection of Verbs is called Conjugation: Verbs are conjugated. Adverbs, Prepositions as such, Conjunctions, Interjections are not inflected and are called Particles.

Adjectives (including Participles) as such are not inflected in Modern Armenian, but they are inflected when they are used substantively.

# NOUNS - Utuantu

#### GENDER — ሀԵቡ

43. The Armenian language has no grammatical gender. The natural gender is expressed either by suffixes or by special words.

44. The suffixes  $-n \zeta h$  ( $\bar{u}hi$ ),  $-u \ln \eta \zeta$  (anuyš),  $-\eta n \ell \mu m$ ( $d\bar{u}\chi t$ ), designate feminine persons. Most common is the suffix  $n \zeta h$ :

իշիսան	iš <sub>X</sub> an	prince
իչխանուհի	išxanūhi	princess
псишипп	ūsa <b>n</b> 0γ	student
ուսանողուհի	ūsanoγūhi	a girl student
Հայկ	Haik	man's name
Հայկուհի	Haikūhi	woman's name

Instead of  $-m \mathcal{L}_{p}$ , the suffixes  $-m \mathcal{L}_{p}$  and  $-m \mathcal{L}_{p}$  can be used to designate feminine names:

ฟทมทุกป์ (Xosrov) — ฟทมทุกปุทุกปุมภา (Xosrovidāxt) วันบุปุ — วันบุปุมาโกระ (Haikanuyš)

45. Special words for feminine and masculine Nouns:

•		
Հայր	hair	father
մայր	mai <b>r</b>	mother
եղբայր	yerbayr	brother
ęŋŗ	k`uy <b>r</b>	sister
สามัยร	manč	boy
mgghy	aγğik	girl
пситр	ūstə <b>r</b>	son
դուստը	dūstər	daughter [band's)
աներ	aner	father-in-law (hus-

ղութանչ	zokanč	mother-in-law (hus- band's)
կեսուր	kesū <b>r</b>	mother-in-law (wife's)
կեսրայը or կեսար	kesrayr kesar	father-in-law (wife's)
տաղը	tagər	brother-in-law (husband's brother)
տալ	tal	sister-in-law (husband's sister)
յովատակ	hovatak	stallion
գամ բիկ	zambik	mare
[unj	χογ	ram
பீயூழி	mak`i	sheep (female)
նոիսազ	noχaz	he-goat
այծ	ayż	she-goat
Ьų	yez	OX
_կով	kov	cow

46. When neither suffixes nor special words are available, the words uyp(ayr) man,  $l_{\mu}h$  (kin) woman,  $upnc(ar\bar{u}) = npd$ (vorž) male, he —  $f_{\mu}(\bar{e}g)$  or  $fumul_{\mu}(matak)$  she — are used before the word to be qualified:

որճ էչ	ēš	ass (male)
՝ մատակ էչ		ass (female)
այը մարդ	mard	man
կին մարդ		woman

DEFINITE ARTICLE — በቦበፔኮՉ 80 ዓ

47. The Armenian Definite Article is  $\rho$  or  $\mathcal{L}$  affixed to the Noun.

**48.** The  $\mu$  is affixed to Nouns ending with a consonant or a pronounced  $\int_{J} (\mu \eta ay, \eta oy)$ .

μωπը bard the word, μωμ (see 3a) the verb, μωμ (3a) the ram.

49. The  $\mathbf{\hat{\nu}}$  is affixed to words ending with vowel or a mute  $\mathbf{A}$  which drops before the Article:

<i>որդի</i> ն	vordin	the son
<i>Ամերիկա</i> ն	Amerikan	(the) America

երեկոն (երեկոյ) (see **3**a) the evening սպան (սպայ) əspan (əspā) the officer

50. The  $\mathbf{\hat{\nu}}$  may be affixed to a Noun with a final consonant if the next word begins with a vowel:

பீயு பான் பிரையான aračeć The man implored or பியிரும் யிரியித்து mardn aračeć

#### INDEFINITE ARTICLE -- ԱՆՈՐՈՇ ፀዐԴ

51. The Indefinite Article is  $d_{II}(m)$ .

52. The Article  $J_{\mu}$  stands after the noun:

աչտարակ մը aštarak mə a tower չատ բարձր, Հոյակապ šat baržər, hoya- a very high and splenչէնք մը kap šēnkʿ mə did building

53. When the Indefinite Article is followed by the Present or the Imperfect time of the Verb *Ld* (yem) I am, or by the Conjunction  $\mu_{l}(al)$  too, also, the form  $d_{l}$  (man) is used: Ես Հայ մրն եմ ves Hay man vem 1 am an Armenian Դու մանուկ մրն ես du manuk man Thou art a child ves an argik mon e She is a girl Ան աղջիկ մրն է Մենը Հին աղդ. մրն menk' hin azg We are an ancient namən yenk ៤ប្អ tion Դուբ բաջ բանակ մրն dūk' k'ağ banak You are a brave army man ēk' ξe Անոնը խառն ամբոխ anonk χaron They are a mixed amboy mon yen crowd մրն են Ես մչակ մըն էի yes məšak mən ēi l was a farmer Դուն այդեգործ մրն dūn aygegorż Thou wert a vine dresmən ēir  $\xi h r$ ser IL'u m'ufufu ghuning an anvaz zinvor He was a fearless soldier մրն էր mən ēr If L'ng unquin danga- menk' azat jogo- We were a free people վուրդ մրն էինը vūrd mən ēink

29

Անոնը Հնութեան մնա-	anonk hənüt <sup>°</sup> yan	They were	the re-
ցորդ մըն էին	mənacord mən ēin	mains of	old times
Նոր Տարի մըն ալ սկսաւ	Nor Tari mən al əskəsav	One more began	New Year

#### NUMBER OF NOUNS — ԱՆՈՒՆՆԵՐՈՒ ԹԻՒԸ

54. There are two numbers of Nouns in Armenian:  $l_quiliperind product (yezaki)$  Singular,  $j_n q_{luu} l_l product (hognaki)$  Plural. Every Noun can have those two numbers in spite of the fact that in Classic Armenian there are some words only in the Plural, others only in the Singular.

#### PLURAL — ՅՈԳՆԱԿԻ

55. In order to form the Plural of a word, add  $-E_{l'}$  (from the classic suffix  $E_{ml'}$ ) to the Singular of monosyllables and  $-E_{l'}$  (from the classic suffix  $mb_{l'} + E_{ml'}$ ) to the Singular of polysyllables :

สามา	mas	part	մասեր	maser	parts
կայծ	kayż	spark	կայծեր	kayżer	sparks
ւռիկին	tikin	lady	տիկիններ	tikinner	ladies
պարտէզ	partēz	garden	պարտէզներ	partēzner	gardens

56. The Nouns ending with the suffix e(k') are pluralia tantum in Classic Armenian, but are considered as Singular in Modern Armenian and receive the usual Plural ending  $-E_P(-\Sigma E_P)$ .

ŧ

l

шźр	ačk	eye	աչքեր	ačk <sup>°</sup> er	eyes
7542	dēpk	event	ղէպքեր	dēpk`er	events
բարք	bark'	custom	բարքեր	bark`er	customs
ջիմջ	k`imk`	palate	ւջիմ ջեր	k`imk`er	p <b>a</b> lates
ழாடம்ழ	k`ūnk`	temple,	բունքեր	k`ūnk`er	temples
		side of the	e head		
պէտը	pētk`	need	պէտքեր	pētk`er	needs
պարտբ	partk	duty	պարտքեր	pa <b>r</b> tk <sup>°</sup> er	duties
պիտոյք	pituyk	requisite	պիտոյքներ	pituyk <sup>°</sup> ner	requisites
սփոփանվ	spʻopʻankʻ		սփոփանք–		solaces
		solace	ներ	p`ank`ne	r

30

ue្យបើងដ– [[re	sk`ančelik`	wonder	սքանչելիք- Ներ		wonders
սնոտիջ - ցնորջ ընԹրիջ	sənotik' cənork' ənt'rik'	trifle phantasy supper	սնոտիջներ ցնորջներ ընԹրիջներ	snotik`ner cənork`ner ənt`rik`ner	phantasies suppers
եբնճ	berk`	earth pro- ducts	բերջեր	berk`er	products
կամբ	kamk'	will	կամջեր	kamk`er	wills
կառը	kařk <sup>°</sup>	car		kark er	cars
<i>~կմախ</i> ք	kəmaxk	skeleton	կմախքներ	kə max k <sup>°</sup> ner	skeletons
z"7[r₽	šorik`	saliva,		ŝoγikʿner	1
լործունք	loržūnk'	spittle	Innanibe-	ŝoγik`ner loržūnk`ner	spittles
		,	ներ		
gnigę	ĊŨĊĸʿ	ballad	-	čūčk`er	ballads
ாளழ	votk	foot	ոտքեր	votk`er	fe <b>et</b>
ձեռք	žeřk	hand	ձեռ քեր	žeřk`er	hands
<u>∽"[</u> ‴ց₽	səlack'	flight	սլացջներ	səlačk <sup>°</sup> ner	flights
4508	vē <b>r</b> k'	wound	Jypetp		wounds
C		flood	սահանքներ		floods
փորձանը	p`oržank'	accident,	փորձանը-		accidents
		reverse	` ներ		reverses
յորճանը	horžank	stream	յորճանը-	horžank <sup>-</sup> -	streams
			ներ		

Note 1. Some of those Nouns are used without the final -e.

ų-npð (ϼ) gorż(k`) երես(ϼ) yeres(k`)		գործեր երեսներ		works
	iace	սրսսսսր	yeresner	laces

Note 2. There are some Singular Nouns with a radical final  $e: 4\nu he$ (kənik') seal;  $\mu m e (b \bar{u} k')$  snowstorm;  $\mu m e (\bar{s} \bar{u} k')$  shadow, splendor;  $\theta m e e^{-t' \bar{u} k'}$  spit. See also 87.

57. The Classic Armenian has monosyllables with final  $\hat{\nu}$  in the Singular; the modern language drops the  $\hat{\nu}$  in the Singular, but infixes it in the Plural before  $-k_P$ :

Lq·LI	yez(n)	ox	եղներ	yezner	oxen
gain (h)	dūr(n)	door	դոներ	dərner	doors
Snil(2)	žūk(n)	fish	<i></i>	žəkner	fishes
Inch ( Sc)	mūk(n)	mouse	մկներ	məkner	mice

Հարս(ն) մատ(ն) լեռ (լեառն)	mat(n) ler	bride finger mountain	<i>հարս</i> ներ մ <i>ատ</i> ներ լեռներ	matner	brides fingers mountains
[#nn(b)		grandchild	Թոռներ	t°orner	[children grand-

58. Some other words of the same category drop the  $\mathcal{L}$  both in the Singular and the Plural:

መክ ${f x}({f y})$	anž	person	անձեր	anžer	persons
f (5.)	mac	in a state	٤.		persons
ม แมน (น)	mus	part	մասեր	maser	parts

59. The modern language is for the suppression of the  $\hat{L}$  of classic monosyllables both in the Singular and in the Plural:

եզ — եզեր	yezer
ղուռ — ղուռեր	dürer
ծուկ — ծուկեր	žūker
մուկ — մուկեր	müker
Հարս — Հարսեր	harser
մատ — մատեր՝	mater
լեռ — լեռել	lerer
Թոռ — Թոռեր	torer

60. In the Plural with  $\Sigma$ , the alternation of the vowels  $\mu$ ,  $\mu$ , is preserved; in the Plural without  $\Sigma$  the vowels may not change:

դուռ — դռներ but դուռեր or դռեր ձուկ — ձկներ but ձուկեր or ձկեր մուկ — մկներ but մուկեր or մկեր

61. Monosyllables which have two final consonants, and an unwritten  $\underline{\mu}$  is pronounced between them, also monosyllables which have initial two consonants, and an unwritten  $\underline{\mu}$  is pronounced between them, are treated like polysyllables and form the Plural with  $-\Sigma L_{\mu}$ :

wr47	arkər	box	արկղներ	arkəyner	boxes
/ոսկը	voskər	bone	ոսկրներ	voskərner	bones
Հաստղ	astəy	star	աստղներ	astəyner	stars
/4.[""["	gəlüx	head	գլուխներ	gəlüyner	heads
~ #LnLp	bəlūr	hill	բլուըներ	bəlürner	hills
ի՞ն կրատ	məkrat	scissor	մկրատներ	mək <b>r</b> atner	scissors

62. Compound words being polysyllables form their Plural with  $-bL_{P}$ ; but if the second member of the compound is a mono-syllable, the Plural can be formed with  $-L_{P}$  also:

<i>լե-զուա</i> -գէտ <i>լե-զուա-գէտներ մատեն-ա</i> -գիր մատեն-ա-գիրներ Հօր-ա-քղյր	lezvagēt lezvagētner matenagir matenagirner hōrakʿuyr	linguist linguists writer writers
ւ յւ ւօր–ա–քոյրներ <sup>or</sup> ւօր–ա–քոյրեր	hōrakʿuyrner hōrakʿuyrer	aunt (father's sister) aunts (father's sisters)

63. Words with a final mute J drop it before  $-\Sigma L_{II}$ :

Տամ բայ	ġambā	way,	ծամ բաներ	ġambaner	ways	
տղայ	təγā	child	տղաներ	t∂γaner	children	
արքայ	arkʿā	king	արջաներ	arkʿaner	kings	
սպայ	spā	officer	սպաներ	spaner	officers	
ծառայ	żarā	servant	ծառաներ	żařaner	servants	

CASES — ՀՈԼՈՎՆԵՐ

64. Armenian is an inflected language. The Nouns take different endings according to their function in a sentence. This change in endings is called Declension; and every member of it is called a Case.

65. There are seven Cases in Armenian, both for Singular and Plural, but only four distinct Case-endings.

The Cases are:

a) nungunu (ârrakan) Nominative, the Case of the Subject

b) **Utraulum** (serakan) Genitive, which may generally be translated by the English Possessive ('s), or by the Objective with the Preposition "of".

c) Spurlywir (torakan) Dative, the Case of the Indirect Obical It may usually be translated by the Objective with the interposition "to" or "for". d) Zuyguuluub (haycakan) Accusative, the Case of the Direct Object.

e) *Fugunuluu* (bacarakan) Ablative, which may usually be translated by the Objective with "from" or "by".

f) **9**-npô huluu (gorżiakan) Instrumental, the Case of the instrument. It may usually be translated by the Objective with "by", "with", "in".

g) 4njuluu (kočakan) Vocative, the Case of Direct Address.

In spite of the seven Cases, there are only four Case-endings: Accusative and Vocative have the same Case-ending as the Nominative; the Dative has the same as the Genitive; Ablative; Instrumental.

#### THE THREE DECLENSIONS --- ԵቦԵዳ ՀՈԼՈՎՈՒՄՆԵՐԸ

**66.** In modern Armenian there are three regular Declensions. They have each their own Case-endings in the Genitive Singular:  $1 - \mu$ , 11 - m, 111 - m.

67. The first two Declensions end in a vowel in the Genitive Singular (Vowel Stems).

**68.** In the Third Declension the vowel  $\boldsymbol{\mu}$  is followed by the ending-consonant  $\boldsymbol{\mu}$ . (Consonant Stems.)

69. The Case-endings common to all Declensions both in Singular and in Plural are: Ablative Singular  $-\xi$ , Plural  $-(\iota) L_{\mu}\xi$ .

Instrumental: Singular -nd, Plural (1)4pnd.

The Genitive and Dative Plural for all Declensions is  $-(b)E_{\mu\mu\nu}$ .

#### First Declension

70. The Genitive Singular of the First Declension ends in -h.

71. To the First Declension belong:

a) The majority of the Armenian words. The trend of the modern language is to suppress the other Declensions in favor of the First.

b) Words ending in -h: *եկեղեցի* church; *մատանի* ring; *այդի* vineyard; *դինի* wine; *բանայի* key; *Հայեյի* mirror.

c) Abstract Nouns in -njfe: Stepnjfe old age; miternjfe old age; siminjfe culture; quijpnjfe anger. d) Substantively used Adjectives, Present and Past Participles, and Postpositions (See 431, 432).

- e) The Numerals.
- f) The Compound Words. They decline their last part only.
- g) The Proper Names.

# 72. Paradigms of the First Declension:

2	۰.
1	

Monosyllabic

a)		monosy.	14010	
N. A. G. D. Abl. Inst.	ծառ ծառի ծառէ ծառով	tree of, to from with, by	ծառեր ծառերու ծառերէ ծառերով	trees of, to from with, by
		Polysyl	labic	
N. A. G. D. Abl. Inst.	ួយៗយខ្ ួយៗយខ្ ួយៗយខ្ ួយៗយខ្ការ	town of, to from with, by	ջաղաջներ ջաղաջներու ջաղաջներէ ջաղաջներդ	towns if, to from with, by
t N. A. G. D. Abl. Inst.	)) եկեղեցի եկեղեցիի եկեղեցիէ եկեղեցիով	church of, to from with, by	եկեղեցիներ եկեղեցիներու եկեղեցիներէ եկեղեցիներէ	churches of, to from with, by
N. A. G. D.	c) մ չակոյԹ մ չակոյԹի	culture of, to	մ չակոյԹներ մ չակոյԹներու մ չակոյԹներե	cultures of, to from

Abl.	մչակոյթէ	from	մչակոյթսերդ	110111 111. hun
Inst.	մչակոյթով	with, by	մչակոյթներով	with, by
mst.	"Z"4"JC"1			

d) Adjectives, Participles, and Postpositions used substantively:

# Monosyllabic Adjectives

N. A. V.	4 m m	wicked one	չարեր	wicked ones
<b>G</b> . D.	չարի	of, to	չយក្រមក្រក	of, to
Abl.	չարէ	from	չարերէ չարերով	from with, by
inst.	չարով	with, by	<u>זייין יייץ</u>	,

# Polysyllabic Adjectives

		POlysyllaule A		
N. A. V.	իմաստու		իմաստունն	<i>L</i> <sub>l</sub> wise men
G. D.	իմաստու	<i>նի</i> of, to	<i>ես աստունն</i>	<i>ырпь</i> of, to
Abl.	_ իմաստու	Lif from	իմաստունն	
Inst.	- ក្រវា ណាពាក	fund with, by	իմաստունն	<i>երով</i> with, by
		Present Par		
N. A. V.	դործող	one who works	6, գործողնե	ones who
G. D.	դործողի		g դործողն	Epne of, to
Abl.	4.000000	from	գործողն	երէ from
Inst.	4nn8nnn	from with, by	<i>դործող</i> ն	ternel with, by
		Past Part		
N. A. 11	ործած	a thing worked	գործածներ	things worked
	ործածի	of, to out	գործածներ	me of, to [out
<b>.</b> ,	ործածէ	from -	դործածներ	ι <b>ξ</b> from
	ործածով			
Ľ		Postposi	tions	
N. A.	sfð	-	մէջեր	insides
G. D.		of, to	մէջերու	of, to
Abl.	~>2r \$£95	from	ſţĮĿŗţ	from
Inst.			մէջերով	with, by
	Numerals:		nal	
N. A.	ц <i>ь</i> у	six	վեցեր	six ones
G. D.	ղ»ց վեցի	of, to		of, to
Abl.	ղ	from	վեցերէ	from
Inst.	ղ»ցչ վեցով	with, by	վեցերով	with, by
mou	<b>4</b> - <i>j</i> - <i>1</i> .	Ordin		
N. A.	եցերորդ		 վեցերորդնե	sixth ones
1	լ»յ-լ․․լ․։  եցերորդ		վեցերորդնե	
	լ»յ»լուլու  եցերորդ	L _ '	վեցերորդն	4 <u>·</u>
	լութուրը լեցերորդ		վեցերորդնե	
f) Compound words:				
	сотроина порили	<u> </u>	գօրավարնե	Generals
G. D.	ղօրավալ հ		գօրավարնե	
Abl.	ղօրավալ ղօրավալ		գօրավարն <b>և</b>	L
Inst.	ղօրավալ գօրավա		ղօրավարն <b>ն</b>	()
11101.	<u>"</u> """""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""	<u> </u>	1-1-1-1-1	L L

g) Proper Names: Personal and Geographic

G. D. Abl.	.Սահակ Սահակի Սահակի Սահակէ Սահակով	of, to from	Հայաստան Հայաստան Հայաստան Հայաստան	/ of, to / from
G. D. Abl.	Արուքս Արուքսի Արուքսէ Արուքսով	from	Մասիս Մասիսի Մասիսէ Մասիսէ	Masis (Mountain) of, to from with, by

#### Second Declension

73. The Genitive Singular of the Second Declension ends in -nL.

74. To the Second Declension belong:

a) Most of the monosyllables:

бþ	horse	டிய4	throne
մարդ	man	ծեր	old man
lynd 🗍	cow	<u> 4 ш г</u>	hen
ծով	sea	பீய4	death
zm <sup>7</sup>	profit	ជំ របប់ ទ	boy
ժամ	hour	щшщ	grandpa
դար	century	ป้านป้	grandma
шŋŷ	bear	Snd	wind
щш	moment, hour, time	L.	

Note: These words can take the Genitive-vowel (*f*) of the First Declension, except  $\delta p$ , dwpq,  $\eta wp$ ,  $dwb\xi$  (see 71 a).

b) All the Infinitives  $(-h_L, -h_L - m_L, -m_L)$  when used as Verbal Nouns, in the Singular only.

75. Paradigms of the Second Declension:

a)

N. A.	đþ	horse	ձիեր	horses
G. D.	ត៍ ព្រាក	of, to	<b>៩</b> គ្រៃក្រារ	of, to
Abl.	۲ کولی	from	ձիերէ	from
Inst.	<b>ភ្នំក្រា</b> រ[	with, by	<u> </u>	with, by

b) Infinitive in -L c) Infinitive in  $-h_1$ N.A. speaking տեսնեւ seeing houhi G. D. unhulihing of, for of. for Juoubine տեսնելէ Abl. from houtit from Inst տեսնելով luoubind bv bv Note: The Infinitive in  $-h_l$  changes to  $-h_l$  in Gen., Dat., Abl., Inst. d) Infinitive in -un e) Infinitive in -nL N. A. Sugar coughing [JnnnL] leaving G. D. of, for Jonn Int of. for Sugarne Abl. Suguit Jangit from from Inst. Bungind Հաղայով bv bv

Note: The vowel -ne of -net is suppressed in Gen., Dat., Abl. and Inst.

Third Declension

76. The Singular Genitive of the Third Declension has  $\tilde{\nu}$  as the last consonant; it is preceded by the vowel m.

77. To the Third Declension belong:

a) Abstract Nouns (virtues, vices) with the ending -m.[][[[[[[u]]]]]] in the Nominative; Genitive: m.[][[[[u]]]]:

b) Concrete Nouns of primary formation with the ending -heb in the Nominative; Genitive: -hub.

Note: Words formed with the suffix  $-h^{Lb}$  belong to the First Declension (Gen. -h), f. i.  $f^{2b}q-h^{Lb}$  noise of bells, guns; """" $h-h^{Lb}$  murmur of leaves.

c) Verbal Nouns with the ending <u>-n\_f</u> (Classic: <u>-n\_ff</u>) in / the Nominative; Genitive <u>-fmb</u>. Nom. Plur. <u>-n\_ffilip</u>.

Note: Proper Nouns ending in  $-n \perp d$  ( $2 \perp d \mu \perp p \perp d n \perp d$ ) and Nouns in which the ending  $-n \perp d$  is not the shortened form of the ancient  $-n \perp d u$  (f. i.  $\eta \cdot \eta \cdot n \perp d$  gourd  $e p \cdot e n \perp d$  saffron) belong to the First Declension.

d) Nouns ending in  $\mathcal{L}$  in Classic Armenian and preceded by a consonant or the vowel *me*: Genitive:  $-m\mathcal{L}$ 

Note: The Modern Armenian has dropped the  $\overline{\nu}$  in the Nominative and may decline these words according to the First Declension. The Plural of such words is twofold:  $-k_F$  or  $-\tilde{\nu}k_F$ . See 57-61.

f) The words *wnghl* girl, *swunch* child, *fphu* husband, *luhu* wife.

Note: It is not unusual to hear all the words in a-f declined according to the First Declension.

78. Paradigms of the Third Declension:

a) –ութիւն, –ութեան					
N. A.	աչիսատութիւն	labor, work			
G. D.	աչխատութեան	of, to			
Abl.	աշխատութենէ	from			
Inst.	աշխատութեամբ	with			

Likewise:

դովութիւն	praise
բարութիւն	kindness
Յուժկայութիւն	abstinence
իմաստութիւն	wisdom
խոհեմութիւն	prudence
Super File	wickedness
ծերութիւն	old age
երիտասարդութիւն	youth
բարկութիւն	anger
հպարտութիւն	pride
อกเกาเสียกเน	laziness

Note: The Plural in a and b-c is according to the First and Second Declension:  $-\frac{k_E_P}{k_E_P}$ ,  $-\frac{k_E_P}{k_E_P}$ , etc.

b)	–իւն, –եան	r		
	արիւն արեան արիւնէ արիւնով			
	kewise: անկլ ծիւն –ում (–ում	snow	Genitive: Genitive:	անկեան ձեան
N. A. G. D. Abl. Inst.	חבטחבול חבטולנטנו חבטחבולד (ו חבטחבולחון (		study of, to from with	

Likewise:	կատարում	accomplishment
	ընեերցում	reading
	ցասում	anger
	Հարցում	question

d) — Consonant +  $\mathbf{\tilde{u}}$ 

N. A.	<i>ы п</i> _4(Ъ)	mouse	մկներ 01 մկեր 01 մո	ւկեր
G. D.	մկուն՝	of, to	մ կներու	mice
Abl.	մուկէ	from	մկներէ	
Inst.	մուկով	with	វេដ្ដ៍បត់ពួករៀ	

Likewise: եղ, եղան; ղուռ, դռան; լեռ, լեռան; Թոռ, Թոռան; ձուկ, ձկան (see 57–61)

-Vowel  $m_L + u$ 

N. A.	աուն	house	տուներ or տներ houses
G. D.	տան	of, to	տուներու տներու
Abl.	տունէ	from	տուներէ տներէ
Inst.	տունով	with	տուներով տներով

Likewise: անուն name; անուան -- անուններ դարուն spring - դարնան -- գարուններ աչուն autumn -- աչնան -- աչուններ

e) Words of time: Genitive: \_n\_uu N. A. day оп орեր days G. D. օրուան of, to орեрпс opt (opeput) from Abl. օրերէ Inst. орпц with օրերով

ժամ — ժամուան — ժամեր hour(s) չարաթ — չարաթուան — չարաթներweek(s) ամիս — ամսուան — ամիսներ month(s) տարի — տարուան — տարիներ year(s) անդամ, –ուան, –ներ time (this time, how գիչեր — գիչերուան — գիչերներ night(s) [many times) ժամանակ, –ուան, –ներ time(s) երէկ --- երէկուան --- երէկներ vesterday(s) իրիկուն — իրիկուան — իրիկուններ evening(s)

40

шпшьот, –пьши, –ивр	morning(s)
առտու — առտուան — առտուներ ամառ — ամառուան — ամառներ	summer(s)
Հմեռ — Հմեռուան — Հմեռներ	winter(s)
առաջ — առաջուան — առաջներ	past, former time(s)

f) The words unghy, submuly, Ephy, huhy

G. D.	աղջկան	մանկան	Էրկան	կնկան
Abl.	wgghys	մանուկէ	50/45	<b>դ</b> որկե
Inst.	աղջիկով	մանուկով	Էրիկով	կնիկով
Plur.	աղջիկներ	մանուկներ	էրիկներ	կնիկներ

## SUBSTANTIVES OF PECULIAR OR IRREGULAR DECLENSION

Archaic Forms

79. Words designating relationship have preserved their archaic Declension in the Singular.

٢	NomAcc.	GenDat.	Abl.	Inst.	Plural	See
1.	Հայր	Sop	Sough	Հօրմով		( <b>45)</b>
		ป้อท	մօրմէ	ป้อกปีกป	~ ~ ~	(45)
3.	եղբայը	եղբօր	Lypopuly		եղբայրներ	(45)
4.	կին	<i>ម្ម</i> រោខ្	<i>կ</i> ъп ይሆ է	<i>រុប៣ ខ្លាំ ៣រុ</i>	կիներ	(46)
5.		erng		<i>ุ<sub>₽</sub>ุกกรู</i> ถุ่าน/		(45)
				enger aunt		
_		ष्ट्रणाः २०१	եղբայը,	մօրեղբայը	uncle	
6.	պոր	աներոջ	աներէ	աներով	աներներ	(45)
7.	կեսուր	կեսրոջ	կեսուրէ	կեսուրով	կեսուրներ	(45)
				տագրով	տագրներ	(45)
		(տագրի)				(
	-			տալոջմով	· · ·	(45)
				ներոջմով		
				ife, sister-in-		
11.				Տիրոջմով		Lord
	~				Նէ) (Տերամ	የዋ)
	Տիկին			· Տիկինով		Lady
13.	ընկեր	ընկերոջ	ընկերէ	ընկերով	ընկերներ	friend

41

•

# CLASSIC SINGULAR CASE-ENDINGS IN MODERN ARMENIAN

80. Some Classic Gen.-Dat. endings in the Singular are used in modern literature. But the regular h-ending is equally used. We give both the Classic, and, in parenthesis, the modern form. Ablative, Instrumental Singular and the Plural are in modern form.

a)	N. A.			incluin form.
		U. D.	Abl.	Inst.
Աստուս		Աստուծոյ	Աստուծմ	է Աստուծմով
5шсшт (2	taith	հաւատոյ	հաւատք	Հաւատքով
(Сшешт		(Հաւատքի)	£*	<i>\</i> E4
<i>Jnju</i>	hope	JALUAJ (JAJU	h) Inint	յոյսով
μţμ	love	սիրոյ	م ج و ج	յ,յսով սիրով
լոյս	light	լուսոյ (լոյսի		
			/ 25-5	[nLund]
Sara	fire	հրոյ (հուրի)	հուրէ	([njun4])
	request	խնդրոյ	•	4 (nL) [nn]
		(իսնդիրի)		խնդրով
5ny/	soul	Հողւոյ	(խնդերըէ)	(խնդիրով)
		(Հոգիի)	հոգիէ	Sngend
մարմին	body	( աղմնոյ	e (e .	(Հոգիով)
	oouy	(.f	մարմնել	մարմնով
եկեղեցի	church	(մարմինի)	(մարմինէ	
1-1-91	chuith	եկեղեցւոյ	եկեղեցիէ	եկեղեցիով
պատիւ	have	(եկեղեցիի)		
<i></i>	honor	щшипспј	պատիւէ	щштрепи
հաշիւ		(պատիւի)		
	account	Swench	հաչիւէ	Swzpind
,		(Հաչիւի)		
+กฎก- ปุกเทน	people	dnnn-	ժողո- վուլոդէ	ิฮากุกปุกเก- กุกปุ
4"-1"4		վրդեան	Jacant	
		(Ժողովուրդի)		1.1
ծնունդ	birth	ծննդեան	ծնունդէ	ծնունդով
		(15 5 1)		0 411244114
Հանգիստ	rest	Հանդստեան	Տանոհատե	Հանգիստով
		(Swhnhumh)		
փախուստ	flight,	փախստեան	they bear and	փախուստով
-	escape	(hmhuntumh)	7	արանուրասով
Յաջուստ		(ղըստեան Թաքստեան	<i>n</i> ,	<i>n</i> .
• T	place	(A.,	֎ՠ֍ՠՠՠ֎	ศรมอนเกมน
	L	(Թաքուստի)		

42

ł

N, A.		G. D.	Abl.	Inst.
սերունդ	race, ge-	սերնդեան	սերունդէ	սերունդով
		(սերունդի)	-	
սնունդ.		սննդեան	սնունդէ	սնունդով
Ĺ		(սնունդի)	- ,	
գալուստ		գալստեան	գալուստէ	<i>գալուստով</i>
LL		(ฉุณาการการการการการการการการการการการการการ		
կայսը	caesar	կայսեր	կայսըէ	կայսրով
200		(կայսրի)		
դուստը	daughter		ղուստըէ	กุกเมเตยนไ
		(ղուստրի)		
b)		The Proper	Names	
Ţ,			in the G	an - Dat ·

The Proper Names may have -uy in the Gen.-Dat.: Umsuh Umsuhuy Umsuhi Umsuhi (Umsuhi)

# INSTRUMENTAL CASE-ENDINGS AS ADVERBS

81. Some Nouns in the Classic Instrumental are used as Adverbs (see 409 a).

առԹիւ (առիթով)	on the occasion of
ճչմարտիւ	truly
պատճառաւ (պատճառով)	on account of
Iph.	fully
ստուգիւ	certainly
แบลเมโย	in person

## CLASSIC CASE-ENDINGS IN PLURAL

82. The Plural in Classic Armenian ends: Nom.  $-\mu$ , G.D. -g. These Case-endings are still in use in Modern Armenian together with the regular Nom.  $-(\nu) L_{\mu}$ , G.D.  $-(\nu) L_{\mu}$ .

83. The Classic -e, -g may be used to form the Plural of:
a) Names of nations ending in -wgh (Gen. Sing. -wging, Plural -wging):

# N. A. Ամերիկացիջ or Ամերիկացիներ Americans, G. D Ամերիկացւոց or Ամերիկացիներու

Likewise: Հայաստանցիջ Inhabitants of Armenia, Որուսաստանցիջ Inhabitants of Russia, Գերմանացիջ Germans.

b) Names of nations in general, irrespective of their ending: N. A. G. D. Հայջ Armenians Հայոց от Հայեր — Հայերու Պարսիկջ Persians Պարսից от Պարսիկներ — -ներու Յոյնը Greeks Յունաց от Յոյներ — Յոյներու Ասորիջ Syrians Ասորւոց от Ասորիներ — -ներու

Note: Uunphe Syria, Uunpheh of Syria; Uunphumuh Assyria.

84. In some Nouns, the Classic Plural is very common:

N. A.			<b>G.</b> D.
Անձինը	(անձեր)	persons	անձանց (անձերու)
Հարբ	-	fathers	Հարց
ծնողը	(ծնողներ)	parents	ծնողաց (ծնողներու)
եղբարք		brothers	եղբարց
Տեարբ	( <i>St</i> <sup><i>p</i></sup> 79, 11)	gentlemen	Տեարց
Տիկնայը	(Տիկիններ)	ladies	Տիկնանց
ՔաՀանայ <sub>ք</sub>	(ՔաՀանաներ	)priests	(Տիկիններու) 79, 12 ՔաՀանայից (ՔաՀանաներու)
կանայը	(կիներ)	women	կանանց (-երու) 79,4
Պարոնայը	(պարոններ)	gentlemen	Պարոններու
ոնեն	(որդիներ)	sons	Sing. <i>Պարոն</i> Mr., Sir <i>որդւոց (որդիներու</i> )

85. Words ending in  $-\mu u_{\ell}$ ,  $-\mu u_{\ell}$ ,  $-\mu u_{\ell}$ ,  $-\mu u_{\ell}$ ,  $-\mu u_{\ell}$ , show the Classic Plural. They indicate descent or relationship (Patronymics). Originally gentile Adjectives, these words have all become Nouns.

N. A.		G. D.
Վարդանանը	Army of Vardan	Վարդանանց
Ղեւոնդեանք	The group of priests with Leont	Ղեւոնդեանց (Ղեւոնդեաններու)

N. <b>A.</b>		<b>G</b> . <b>D</b> .
Հայկազեանը	Dynasty of Haik	Հայկազեանց
Բագրատունիջ Արչակունիջ	Dynasty of Bagratids Dynasty of Arsacids	(Հայկաղեաններու) Բագրատունեաց Արչակունեաց

#### STEMWORDS IN -\*

86. The consonants  $p_{a}$  and  $y_{a}$  are not always Plural Caseendings: They may belong to the stem. In order to avoid confusion and mistakes, some help is given here (see words in  $-p_{a}$ , 56,57).

87. The p preceded by the vowels m, n and L belongs to the stem:

шę	leg	բողոք	appeal	யார	full, fat
տաբ	hot	ողոք	entreaty	ծեք՝	bent, crooked
֎ՠֈՠ֎	town	Թուք	lung	ŀŀĿ	curve
<i>ոլ</i> աճ	arrow	ոլուբ	shinbone		

STEMWORDS IN -8

88. In the following words the y is not a Plural Case-ending. It belongs to the stem:

4mg	bread	ցանց	net
Հարց	question (84!)	yty	moth
end Ferendere en la serende en la serend En la serende en la se en la serende en la se	open	9/19	pile, stake
թաց	wet	jun_y	room, cell
шуд	visit	huh g	cork, valve
<u>Fu</u> g	flam <b>e</b>	Sing	bosom
4.119	closed	Հեց	tire of wheel
lung	wound	[[rg(e)	stuffing
լաց	weeping	4/19	united,
խախաց	chyle		annexed
երէց	1. oldest	gnjg	sign,
	2. priest		demonstration

89. The letter g is found in the suffixes -ng, -mg, -mg, -mg, -ng, -ng,

90. Some Nouns in -ng (Sing.):

աղաւնոց բայոց խարտոց փորոց գրոց	dove house den, cave file difference burin, graver	կրկնոց	weight weaver's shuttle mantle, cloak
յատոց յօտոց կտըոց Քչոց ակնոց	pruning knife flabellum, rin glasses	iging instru	ment agitated by the ring the Armenian Mass

**91.** Verbal Nouns in -mg, -mhg, -hmg, -fg, -ngg. Note: The verbal stem is not used alone but in compounds.

hating evil (mmh, to hate) *չար*ատեազ *անձկ*այրեաց burning with desire (*mphi* to burn) imperishable (munuful) to pass) *ան*անգ orator (multi -- nulti to speak) *բեմ բ*ասաց mpmq.mqlimg fast, speedy (q. 1 m v to go, to walk) eminent (Classic: uninuited to excell) *պերա*զանգ thrown in river (Classic: "hulf to throw) *դետ*ընկէց express train (Classic: "Julium" to run) *ձեպ*ընթագ *բան*իմաց sensible (harmanal to understand) ununug moving toward the clouds (Classic: hunnul to երկայնակեաց long living (Classic: կեամ to live) [move] looking fixedly ( lun jh to be fixed on) *ակն*կառոյց ud guulunnig solidly built (ummeguule, to build) պատարագամատոյց missal (մատուցանել to offer)

#### DIFFERENT CASE-ENDING - DIFFERENT MEANING

92. In some Nouns different Genitive Case-endings are used to denote different meanings. — Most commonly used are:

Nom.		Gen.
Աստուած	1. God	Աստուծոյ
աստուած	2. god	աստուածի

No	m.	Gen.
Աստուածածի	1 U	Հստուածածնայ . Mother of God Հստուածածնի Տօն
տուն գլուխ գրամագլուխ գանձ	<ol> <li>house</li> <li>verse (poem)</li> <li>head</li> <li>boss</li> </ol>	Peast of the Mother of God տուն տունի գլխու գլխու գլխի գրամագլխի գանձու
ղ.աս Ժամ	<ol> <li>hymn</li> <li>class, rank, choir</li> <li>lesson</li> <li>church</li> <li>hour</li> </ol>	գшиан цшиа цшин цшир дшир дшин
չաբաԹ ՇաբաԹ օր ԵրկուչաբԹի ԵրեքչաբԹի ՉորեքչաբԹի ՀինգչաբԹի Հահ Շահ	hen turkey week ( <b>78</b> e) Saturday Monday Tuesday	ςωιπι ςωμωςωιμ ςωμθπιωύ σωμωθορπιωύ σμητιγωμθμ σμπεγγωμθμ ζηνηγωμθμ ζωςπι (74 a) ζωςμ

# CLASSIC ACCUSATIVE, ABLATIVE, AND LOCATIVE

93. In Classic Armenian, the Accusative is formed with the prefix q(quark); the Ablative ("from"-Case) with the Preposition  $l_{i}$  (before vowels  $_{J}$ ). The letter  $l_{i}$  is used also for the Locative ("where"-Case =  $l_{i}l_{i}r_{i}r_{j}ml_{i}ml_{i}$ :  $l_{i}mm_{i}ml_{i}r_{j}l_{i}$  in the garden)

a) In Modern Armenian, the use of these Prepositions is almost entirely eliminated. The Accusative with the q- is still in use for the Personal Pronouns (see 125);

b) The Ablative with the p(J) is found in archaic expressions, as: **f** Shumily from Our Lord; **J** Jummedonj from God; **jumpulity jumpmendif** namely (Nom. **u**lpu eye; **ubmedi** name); **f u**lpupulity from the beginning (Nom. **u**lpupul)

c) Locative with the  $[h, j: j \bigcup umn \& h j$  in the Name of God; [h umn h in mind; [h umm h in heart; [h umu h home; [h & h mu h home; [h

# DEFINITE ARTICLE IN DECLENSIONS

94. The Definite Article (the letter  $\mathbf{\hat{b}}$  or  $\underline{\mathbf{p}}$ ) is attached to the Case-ending of the declined word according to the following rules.

a) The Instrumental Case Singular and Plural, must be left without the Definite Article.

Wrong: *фициппվը шупь* to burn with the wood Right: *фиципп ицпь* 

Wrong: Sunphubennie querunt to decorate with the flowers Right: Sunphubenni querunt

b) No Definite Article is to be affixed to the Gen.-Dat. Singular of the Third Declension.

Wrong: տէրու [Ժեանը (29), ուս մանը (78 c), մկանը (78 d), օրուանը (78 e)

Right: *տէրութեան, ուսման* etc.

c) It is better not to attach the Definite Article to the Ablative Singular of the Third Declension.

Not wrong: օրուընէն, տէրուԹենէն Better: օրուընէ, տէրուԹենէ

d) The Nominative and Accusative of all Declensions can always have the Definite Article.

e) In the Plural, the Definite Article is attached to all the Case-endings, except the Instrumental.

Note: In Armenian there are Possesive Articles  $-\mu$ ,  $-\mu$ ,  $-\mu$ ,  $-\mu$  (see 12t)-132) besides the Definite Article. They can be attached to all the Case-endings of all the Declensions. Hence, f. i. dumpmende would mean: with his pencil.

Classic Case-Endings and Definite Article

**95.** The Definite Article shoud never be attached to the Classic Case-endings used in modern language:

Wrong: *Պարսիցը բանակը* the army of the Persians; *թարարուացը արչաւանը* the invasion of the barbarians.

Right: Պարսիկներուն բանակը; բարբարոսներուն արչաւանքը or Պարսից բանակը․ բարբարոսաց արչաւանքը.

Wrong: Հայջը; Right: Հայջ or Հայերը; Հայոց or Հայերուն.

96. Paradigm of the Declensions with the Definite Article: a)

N. A. G. D. Abl. Inst.	ծառը ծառին ծառէն ծառով	the tree of, to from with	ծառերը ծառերուն ծառերէն ծառերով	the trees of, to from with
N. A. G. D. Abl. Inst.	քաղաքը քաղաքին քաղաքին	the town of, to from with	քաղաքներ քաղաքներ քաղաքներ քաղաքներ	הבניסל, to בני from
N. A. G. D. Abl. Inst.	2mpfu of 2mpfu fr	e wicked one , to om ith	Չարերը Չարերուն Չարերէն Չարերով	the wicked ones of, to from with

Note: In the same way are to be declined the Participles and the Postpositions (72d).

b)

N. A.	<i>մարդը</i> the man	մարդերը the men
G. D.	Suppart of, to	մարդերուն of, to
Abl.	Supply from	մարդերէն from
Inst.	funnal with	մարդերով with

4

N. A.	ձին	the horse	ձիերը	the horses
G. D.	ձիուն	of, to	ձիերուն	of, to
Abl.	ձիէն	from	ձիերէն	from
Inst.	ձիով	with	ձիերով	with
N. A. G. D. Abl. Inst.	) արիւնը արեան արիւնէ(ն) արիւնով	the blood of, to from with	արիւնները արիւններուն արիւններէն արիւններով	the bloods of, to from with
N. A. G. D. Abl. Inst.	กะบทะมิย กะบชิฒน กะบกะมิริ(น) กะบกะมิกปู (กะบชิฒนิย)	the study of, to from with	ուսումները ուսումներուն ուսումներէն ուսումներդն	the studies of, to from with
N. A. G. D. Abl. Inst.	աչխատուԹ աչխատուԹ աչխատուԹ աչխատուԹ (–Թիւնով)	եան of,to ենէ(ն) from	ՀաչիսատուԹիւ աչիսատուԹիւն աչիսատուԹիւ աչիսատուԹիւ	សម្លាក of, to
N. A.	մուկը	the mouse	մուկերը	the mice
G. D.	մկան	of, to	մուկերուն	of, to
Abl.	մուկէ(ն)	from	մուկերէն	from
Inst.	մուկով	with	մուկերով	with
N. A.	օրը	the day	օրերը	the days
G. D.	օրուան	of, to	օրերուն	of, to
Abl.	օրէ(Ն)	from	օրերէն	from
Inst.	օրով	with	օրերով	with
N. A.	գարունը	the spring	դարունները	, from
G. D.	գարնան	of, to	դարուններու	
Abl.	գարունէ (ն	) from	դարուններէն	
Inst.	գարունով	with	դարուններով	

.

# ADJECTIVES - Coults

**97.** Adjectives qualify Nouns and are placed before them. They are not declined with the Nouns they modify and do not take their Article:

N.A. բարձր ծառ մր	a high	tree pup of	δunp the high tree
(). D. բարձր ծառի մը	of, to	բարծր	ծառին of, to
Abl. pupáp Sunt de	from	բարծր	ծառէն from
Inst. բարձր ծառով մը	with	բարծր	ծ <i>առով</i> with

pupép suntre the high trees etc. Note: Adjectives may follow the Noun in special cases (See 571).

98. Adjectives are declined and take the Article when they are used as Nouns. They are declined according to the First Declension (§ See 71 d, 72 d, 96 a).

#### COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES — ԲԱՂԴԱՏՈՒԹԻՒՆ ԱԾԱԿԱՆՆԵՐՈՒ

99. Compared with each other, the qualities of Nouns may be found 1) equal 2) superior or 3) inferior to one another.

100. Equality is expressed by

யும் չயர் — எர չயர், யும் உயர் — எர உயம் as... as

Դու այնչափ բարի ես որչափ բոյրդ: You are as kind as your sister.

Դու այն քան խելացի չես որ քան եղբայրդ: You are not so smart as your brother.

101. Superiority is expressed by militian more (put before the Adjective) — emili than (put before the compared Noun):

*Երկինջը աւելի փառաւոր է ջան երկիրը*. Heaven is more glorious than earth. *Հինը աւելի արժէջաւոր չէ միչտ ջան նորը*. The old is not always more valuable than the new.

102. Inferiority is expressed by **Entime** less (put before the adjective) and **puth** than (put before the compared Noun):

2 mjeptup uning upfehu t emu mpupeptup. Armenian is less obscure than Arabic. 2 mjeptup uning and the emu umhueptup. Armenian is not less rich than Latin.

103. Instead of *emb* (than), the Noun compared with may be put in the Ablative:

Ամերիկա աւելի մեծ է ջան Եւրոպա (or) Ամերիկա աւելի մեծ է Եւրոպայէն America is larger than Europe.

104. For classic words the Comparative can be formed by the suffix <u>-mqnju</u> attached to the positive form of the Adjective: <u>ulasmanju</u> greater, <u>fulunumumqnju</u> wiser, <u>jusmfumqnju</u> more often. It is followed as usual by <u>gunu</u>. The suffix <u>-mqnju</u> is not attached to Modern Adjectives (f. i. <u>mqmfu</u>, <u>ghs</u> etc) or to Classic Adjectives in modern meanning. <u>Umfmmlumqnju</u> whiter (from Classic <u>umfmmu</u>). But: <u>mulajh</u> Shpulmu, not Shpulmu<u>u</u>m<u>nju</u>, for Shpulmu<u>u</u> means in Classic Armenian: White horse.

#### SUPERLATIVE OF ADJECTIVES

105. The Superlative degree *Գերադրական աստիճան* of Adjectives is formed:

1. By the Prefix ամենա– ամենաբարձր highest, ամենամեծ greatest.

2. By the Suffix <u>-uq.nj</u> without comparison: *dbbuqnju cubuupp* the greatest genius *pupkpungnju pnppp* the highest pyramid

3. By the Adverbs much; much; muumfily vehemently; summunguing exceedingly; much; hungh a great deal; ישוח לשוףג' very short; און לשוף לשוף very important; שוחה לא שיות הרא extremely cruel; לשולה שיות שיות לא extremely cruel; לשולה שיות שיות לא erry harmful.

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES - ԹՈՒԱԿԱՆ ԱԾԱԿԱՆ

106. The Numeral Adjectives are classified either as Cardinal Numbers answering the question how many? or as Ordinal Numbers answering the question which in order? or as Distributives answering the question how many at a time?

CARDINAL NUMBERS — ԲԱՑԱՐՁԱԿ ԹՈՒԱԿԱՆՆԵՐ

107. The Armenian Cardinal Numbers are:

() ק <i>חח</i> ן (ק <i>ח</i> ס)	18 տասնըուԹը
1 854	19 տասնըինը
2 երկու	20 يىسى 1
3 երեք	21 քուանըմէկ
4 5npu	30 Eptunit
5 4/24	40 քառասուն
6 JEg	50 յիսուն
7 Бофр (нофи)	60 վաթսուն
	70 հօթանասուն
9 /10/ (/11)	80 ություն
10 տասը (տասն)	90 ինըսուն
11 տասնըմէկ	100 հարիւր
12 տասնըերկու	101 հարիւր մէկ
13 տասնըերեք	200 երկու Հարիւր
14 տասնըչորս	1,000 <i>Հաղար</i>
15 տասնըհինդ	5,006 Հինդ Հազար վեց
16 տասնըվեց	10,000 տասը Հաղար (բիւր)
17 เภมมนักษิอศิก	1,000,000 dhipnu

Declension of Cardinals

108. Cardinal Numbers are placed before the Noun and are not declined.

109. Used as Substanstives, Cardinals are declined like the First Declension (see 71 e, 72 e).

a) tenhant takes a -p when declined:

 $μ_{\mu}$   $μ_{$ 

b)  $ho \beta e_{\mu}$ ,  $n \epsilon \beta e_{\mu}$ ,  $h h \mu$ , and  $m m u e_{\mu}$  drop the final  $e_{\mu}$  in Declension:

եօթը G.D. եօթի Abl. եօթէ Inst. եօթով ութը ութի ութէ ութով ինը իննի իննէ իննով տասը տասի (տասնի) տասէ (տասնէ) տասով (-նով).

Number of Nouns with Cardinals

111. The Noun after a Cardinal Number is in the Singular if it is indefinite, it is in Plural, if it is definite:

mmun sunn ten men

but: <u>munp</u> *upphpp* the ten men *supphp afuntap* one hundred soldiers

but: Supper ghunenphlapp the one hundred soldiers

**112.** The Noun may be either in the Singular or in the Plural if it is qualified by another Adjective besides the Cardinal:

տասը բարի մարդ ten good men, or տասը բարի մարդերը Հարիւր բաջ զինուոր one hundred brave soldiers, or Հարիւր քաջ զինուորներ

**113.** The Noun must be in the Plural if it is modified by Possesive or Demonstrative Adjectives:

Մեր երկու ջաջ եղբայրները our two brave brothers Այս երեջ խելացի աչակերտները these three intelligent pupils

ORDINAL NUMBERS — ԴԱՍԱԿԱՆ ԹՈՒԱԿԱՆՆԵՐ

114. Ordinal Numbers are formed by affixing -(k)pnpnto the Cardinals. Exception: mnm 2pn first; but in compounds:  $-sf_{l}h_{l}pnpn_{l}$ .

54

# 115. Ordinals are:

առաջին	First	1
երկ–րորդ	Second	2
եր–րորդ	Third	3
»ը լուրք չոր–րորդ	Fourth	4
Հոր լուրք Հինդ-ե–րորդ	Fifth	5
վեց-ե-րորդ	Sixth	6
եօԹա–ե–րորդ	Seventh	7
ութ-ե-րորդ	Eighth	8
ինն–ե–րորդ	Ninth	9
տասն–ե–րորդ	Tenth	10
տասնըմէկ–ե–րորդ	Eleventh	11
տասնըերկուերորդ	Twelfth	12
տասնըերեքերորդ	Thirteenth	13
տասնըչորսերորդ	Fourteenth	14
տասնըՀինգերորդ	Fifteenth	15
տասնըվեցերորդ	Sixteenth	16
տասնըեօթներորդ	Seventeenth	17
տասնրութերորդ	Eighteenth	18
տասնըիններորդ	Ninteenth	19
քսաներորդ	Twentieth	20
քսանըմէկերորդ	Twenty first	21
երեսներորդ	Thirtieth	30
ջառասներորդ	Fourtieth	40
յիս(ու)ներորդ	Fiftieth	50
վաթա(ու)ներորդ	Sixtieth	60
եօԹանաս(ու)ներորդ	Seventieth	70
ուԹս(ու)ներորդ	Eightieth	80
ինըս(ու)ներորդ	Ninetieth	90
Հարիւրերորդ	Hundreth	100
հարիւը մէկերորդ	Hundred and first	101
երկու Հարիւրերորդ	Two hundreth	200
Հաղարերորդ	Thousandth	1,000
Հինդ Հաղար վեցերորդ	Five thousand and sixth	5,006
տասը Հազարերորդ	Ten thousandth	10,000
տասը միլիոներորդ	Ten millionth	10, <b>000,00</b> 0

116. When used as Substantives, Ordinals are declined like the First Declension.

N.-A. Gen.-Dat. Abl. Inst. առաջինը առաջինին առաջինէն առաջինով առաջինները առաջիններուն առաջիններէն առաջիններով

a) The Classic Genitive man fing (2) is sometimes used.

b) Un \$/ means 1. former 2. one ahead.

117. The Armenian letters are used for Ordinals to indicate chapters and paragraphs in books, centuries or the years of the Armenian Era (begins July 11, 552).

Գլուի U. Chapter I p դ.mp XX<sup>(th)</sup> century β.32,2 1947 A. D.

See the numerical value of the Armenian letters in the Alphabet (List of letters, pag. 4-5, Column 6).

DISTRIBUTIVE NUMBERS — ԲԱՇԽԱԿԱՆ ԹԻՒԵՐ

MULTIPLICATIVES — ԲԱԶՄԱՊԱՏԻԿ ԹՈՒԱԿԱՆՆԵՐ

119. Multiplication is expressed either by the suffix - umm hly attached to the Cardinals or by the Adverb munuf:

464 and five times.

```
Note: double = 4r4/b, 4r4/bummum/4.

triple = bnummum/4, brbemum/4.

fourfold = 2rrbemum/4:

or: br4nc, brbe, inru mbqmd.
```

COLLECTIVES — ՀԱՒԱՔԱԿԱՆ ԹԻՒԵՐ

120. Collective Numbers are formed by the suffix -truly added to the Cardinals:

56

## FRACTIONALS — ԿՈՏՈՐԱԿՆԵՐ

121. Fractions are expressed, as in English, by Cardinals in the Numerator and Ordinals in the Denominator:

<sup>2</sup>/<sub>3</sub> Ephne Eppnpp, <sup>9</sup>/<sub>20</sub> hup enmulepnpp. Note: 1/4 emanpp; 1/2 454; 3/4 Epbe emanpp; 11/2 d54ne450.

NUMERAL ADVERBS — ԹՈՒԱԿԱՆ ՄԱԿԲԱՅՆԵՐ

122. Numeral Adverbs answer the questions how many times? how often?

They are expressed in Armenian by *whywil* put after the Cardinal Number: *dfl whywil* once; *bplac whywil* twice; *bpbp whywil* thrice.

## PRONOUNS — ADPECATE

PERSONAL PRONOUNS — ԱՆՁՆԱԿԱՆ ԴԵՐԱՆՈՒՆ

123. The Armenian Personal Pronouns are:

*Lu* I, *que* thou, *fuep* he, she, it, *stane* we, *quep* you, *fueup* they. There are no special forms for the Feminine of the Third Person Singular.

124. Instead of  $h u_{e_{\mu}}$ ,  $h_{\mu} h u_{e}$ , the Demonstratives m u,  $m u n u_{e}$  are also used (see 144).

125. Pronouns have special forms of Declension, which, in general, are survivals of an ancient Declension differing from that of Nouns. The Personal Pronouns are declined as follows:

a) First Person — Առաջին Դէմք				
	Singular		Plural	
N.	h u	I	<i>մ ե</i> ն ք	we
Ac.	yhu	me	qsbq (dzmez)	us
G.	իմ	of me	โรย	of us
D.	ինծի		d ky þ	
Abl.	ինծմէ (ինէ)	from me	մեզմէ (մենէ)	from us
	ինծմով	by, with me	մեզմով	
	b) Secon	d Person —	Երկրորդ Դէմք	2
N.	դпւն (դпւ)	thou	ппср	you
Ac.	qetq (dzk'ez)	thee	galig (dzžez)	you
G.	fur -	of thee	<i>โ</i> น	of you
D.	etap	to, for thee	ձեզի	to, for you
Abl.	ृहिनगर (हहराई)	from thee	र्दम्नुग्रेट् (र्दम्धर)	from you
	อุษญาทป		<b>ส</b> ้น กูป กป	by, with you

c) Third Person — Երրորդ Դէմք					
N.	ինքը	he, she, it	իրենք	they	
	( <i>hugu</i> ,	ինք)			
Ac.	ղինքը	him, her	գիրենք	them	
G.	hp .	of him, her	իրենց	of them	
D.	իրեն	to, for him, her	իրենց	to, for them	
Abl.	իրմէ	from him, her	իրենցմէ	from them	
	իրմով	with him, her	իրենցմով	by, with them	

Possessive Adjectives and Possessive Articles Ստացական Ածական եւ Ստացական Յօդ

126. The Possessive Adjectives are:  $\mu \sigma$  my;  $\mu r \iota$  thy;  $\mu r$ ( $\mu \iota r$ ) his, her, its;  $\sigma \ell \mu r$  our;  $\delta \ell \mu$  your;  $\mu r \ell \iota r$  their.

Note: Instead of  $h_{IP}$ ,  $h_{IP}h_{Dg}$ , the Demonstrative Adjectives  $m_{DnP}$ ,  $m_{DnDg}$  can be used.

127. Besides by Possessive Adjectives, the Armenian can express possession by some letters called Possessive Articles. They are: Singular 1st Person  $-\mu$ , 2nd Person  $-\eta$ , and 3rd Person  $\nu$  ( $\mu$ ). For all Persons of the Plural:  $\nu$  ( $\mu$ ).

128. The Possessive Articles must be attached to the Caseending of the Noun both in Singular and Plural; the Noun must be preceded by the corresponding Possessive Adjective. In the First and Second Person Singular, however, the Possessive Adjective can be omitted, the Article being clear enough to denote the Person.

129. The Possessive Adjectives are not declined with the Noun.

Paradigm of Declensions with Possessive Articles 130. Single Possessor and single Object:

Rturd Damas

	First Pe	erson	Second Person
N. A.	(իմ) գիրքս	my book	( <i>eni</i> ) சு <i>ந்ந</i> சு thy book
G. D.	(իմ) գրջիս	of, to, (for)	(enc) qpefiq of, to, (for)
Abl.	(१८) मृत्युर्ध	from	(enc) apeta from
Inst.	(իմ) գրբովս	b <b>y</b> , with	(en.) qpendq by, with

Third Person

N. A.	իը (իւր) գիրգը	his, her book
		of, to, (for) his, her
Abl.	իր (իւր) գրջէն	from his, her
Inst.	իր (իւր) գրջովը	by, with his, her

131. Many Possessors and single Object:

N.A. *d b p* our *d b p* your *b p b b* ook G.D. JEn of, to, SEn of, to, Intering of, to, 4-12/16 hook Abl. Itep from, step from, pptug from, qpgtu book Inst. SEP with , dep with , hphing with , appnin book 132. Single Possessor and many Objects: First Person Second Person N. A. (hu) 4pp to p-u my books (pn) 4pp to p-q. thy books G. D. (hu) HIPE Incu of, to (pnL) HIPE Inc. of, to Abl. (hu) 4nghnfu from (enc) 4nghnfu from Inst. (hu) anglennil by, with (pn) anplanda with Third Person ks

N. A.	իր (իւր) գրջեր-ը	his, her book
G. D.	իր (իւր) գրջերուն	of, to
Abl.	իր (իւր) գրջերէն	
Inst.	իր (իւր) գրջերովը	

133. Many Possessors and many Objects:

First Person Second Person Third Person

Note: The  $\mathbf{b}$  or  $\mathbf{p}$  is not the Definite Article here. It is the Possessive Article which must be attached to all Case-endings, even to the Instrumental (94 e).

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS - USU8U4UL ACPULANE

134. The Possessive Adjectives and the Possessive Articles combined form Possessive Pronouns:

60

1 st Person:	իմս	mine	մերը	ours
2nd Person:	քուկդ	thine	ձերը	yours
3rd Person:	իրենը	his, hers	իրենցը	theirs
	(անորը)		(անոնցը	)

135. The Possessive Pronouns take the place of a Noun and are declined like the Nouns of the First Declension.

Paradigm of Possessive Pronouns Declined 136. Single Possessor and single Object:

N. A.	իմս or իմինս	mine	բուկղ or բուկինդ	thine
<b>G</b> . D.	իմինիս	of, to	քուկինիդ.	of, to
Abl.	իմինէս	from	քուկինէդ	from
Inst.	իմինովս	with	բուկինովը	with
	N. A.	իրը (իրեն	(m) his, hers	
	<b>G.</b> D.	իրենինը	of, to	
	Abl.	իրենինեն	from	
	Inst.	իրենինով	l' with	

or: անորը, անորինին, անորինէն, անորինովը.

137. Single Possessor, but many Objects:

N. A. G. D. Abl. Inst.	իմ իններս իմ իններուս իմ իններէս իմ իններովս	of, to end from end	կիններդ կիններուդ կիններէդ կիններովդ	thine of, to from with
	N. A.	իրենները	his, hers	
	G. D.	իրեններուն	of, to	
	Abl.	իրեններէն	from	
	Inst.	իրեններովը	with	

or: անորինները, \_երուն, \_երէն, \_երովը.

138. Many Possessors, but single Object:

N. A.	մերը (մերինը)ours		ձերը (ձերինը)yours	
<b>G.</b> D.	մերինին	of, to	<i>ձերինին</i>	of, to
Abl.	<i>մ ե ը ի</i> նէն	from	<u> </u>	from
Inst.	մերինովը	with	ձերինովը	with

N. A.	իրենցը or իրենցինը	theirs
G. D.	իրենցինին	of, to
Abl.	իրենցինէն	from
Inst.	իրենցինովը	with

or: անոնցը, –ցինին, –ցինէն, –ցինովը or անոնցինը etc.

139. Many Possessors and many Objects:

N. A.	<i>մերինները</i> our	s <i>ձերինները</i>	yours
G. D.	մերիններուն of,		of, to
Abl.	វិតក្រុងរោងក្រុងរា from		from
Inst.	វាតក្រប់ប្រតួការ្យ with		
		icci il ita	

N. A.	իրենցինները	theirs
<b>G</b> . D.	իրենցիններուն	of, to
Abl.	իրենցիններէն	from
Inst.	իրենցիններովը	with

or: անոնցինները, –ներուն, –ներէն, –ներովը.

## DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS ՑՈՒՑԱԿԱՆ ԱԾԱԿԱՆ ԵՒ ԴԵՐԱՆՈՒՆ

140. The Demonstratives are used to point out or designate a person or thing for special attention, either with Nouns as Adjectives or alone as Pronouns. They are:

a) Near the speaker: myn, mu, muh, muhlum, um this

b) Near the person spoken with:  $u_j \eta$ ,  $u_j m$ ,  $u_j m h$ ,  $u_j m h$ ,  $u_j m h$ ,  $u_j m h$ .

c) Near a third person, far from the speaker and the person spoken with:  $\mu_1 \nu$ ,  $\mu_2 \nu$ ,  $\mu_2 \nu$ ,  $\mu_3 \nu$ ,  $\mu_4 \nu$ ,  $\nu_4 \nu$ .

141. The Demonstratives *muft*, *muftfum*, *mmft*, *mmftfum*, *muft*, *muftfum* are Pronouns. Their Nominative and Accusative Singular only are extant and in use. Nominative:

ասի (ասիկա) կը պատկանի ինծի this belongs to me ատի (ատիկա) քու գործղ է that's your business անի (անիկա) նոր եկած է Ամերիկա that one has recently come to America Accusative:

ասի (ասիկա) ես գրեցի I wrote this ատի (ատիկա) դու աւրեցիր you spoiled that անի (անիկա) մենջ պատժեցինջ we punished that one

142. The Demonstratives which are monosyllabic (*mju*, *mu*, *mju*, *mju*, *mju*, *mju*, *miu*) are used both as Adjectives and Pronouns.

143. As Adjectives they are not declined and the Noun which follows them must have either the Definite or the Demonstrative Article (identical with the Possessive one:  $\mu$ ,  $\eta$ ,  $\tilde{\nu}$ , p):

Singular: N. A. шји (ши, иш) դшутр от (դшути) this field G.D. այս (աս, սա) դաչտին or (դաչտիս) of, to Abl. այս (աս, սա) դաչաէն or (դաչաէս) from Inst. mju (mu, um) questiond or (questiondu) with Plural: N. А. шји (ши, иш) դшутեр-ը (-и, etc.) these fields G. D. այս (աս, սա) դաչտերու-ն (-ս, etc.) of, to Abl. այս (աս, սա) դաչտերէ-ն (-ս, etc.) from Inst. mju (mu, um) quernhpnd- (-u, etc.) with Singular: N.A. այզ (ատ, զա) պատկերը (or -կերգ) that picture G.D. այդ. (ատ, դա) պատկերին (պատկերիդ) of, to Abl. այդ (ատ, դա) պատկերէն (պատկերէդ) from Inst. mjq (mm, qm) ummhtpndp (ummhtpndq) with Plural: N. A. այզ (ատ, զա) պատկերները (–րզ) those pictures G. D. այդ (ատ, դա) պատկերներուն (–րուդ) of, to Abl. այդ (ատ, դա) պատկերներէն (-րէդ) from Inst. այդ (ատ, դա) պատկերներովը (–րովդ) with Singular: that scene Plural: those scenes N.A. այն (ան, նա) տեսարանը տեսարանները G.D. այն (ան, նա) տեսարանին տեսարաններուն Abl. այն (ան, նա) տեսարանէն տեսարաններէն

Inst. այն (ան, նա) տեսարանովը տեսարաններովը

Note: The Definite and the Demonstrative Articles are identical in the Third Person. To the English this, these, that, those correspond up, my, wy according to the Number of the Noun which follows them.

Paradigm of Demonstrative Pronouns

144. As Pronouns, the monosyllabic Demonstratives are declined as follows: 1st

	1 - 1		and all ue	-
N	1st Singular			
N.	mju, mu, nu thi	5 020	Plural	
A.		o one	munity these ones	
G. E	). <u>wunp</u>	ω	(q)	
Abl.	wulit and a		ասոնց	
Inst.	ասկե, ասորմէ, ասով	ասկից	ասոնցմէ	
	2nd		ասոնցմով	
N.			_	
	шу <b>д</b> , шт, дш tha (п)шт	at one (ista)		
A.		i one (iste)	and the second s	
<b>G</b> . D.	<sup>ww</sup> unn		mmnup (tott)	
Abl.	winkt (minn - Bl	•	winnlig	
Inst.	ատկե (ատորմե, ատով	ատկից)	ատոնցմէ	
	3rd		ատոնցմով	
N.			J	
A.	$m_{1}$ $u_{1}$ $u_{2}$ $u_{2}$ $u_{3}$ $u_{4}$	one (ille)		
G. D.		(1000)	whinhe those ones (illi)	
Abi.	шыпр			
	white (whopist, a	Selet	անոնդ	
Inst.	wind (wingdad)	~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~~	անոնդմ է-	
1.	45 04 4 4			
N. A.	Di Obsolete Declensio	n of the Pr	uunuyund onouns uu, qui, hui:	
<b>G.</b> D.	иш (ипер, иперуш)	this one	unouns um, nu, hu:	
Abl,	L'	of, to	E INese ones	
Inst.	"E45 (""Luputs)	from	of to	
	unend (unenpulad)	with	uningdt from	
N. A. G. D.	<i>դա (դուի</i> , դուիկա)		uninkydad with	
о. <i>D.</i> Аы.	Larub.	that one of, to	Turning those ones	
Inst.	₽ĽЦ\$ (4ninpil\$)	from	<i><sup>q</sup><sup>n</sup>Lnug</i> of to	
	นาเกป (นาเกยปกป)	with	Aurungs from	
N. A. G. D.	նա (նութ, նուրկա)		n-nenugand with	
Abl	buruli	that one of, to	those ones	
Inst.	unit (uninguit)	from	uning of, to	
+	บทะกป (บทะกุกนึกปุ)	with	hurnhydt from	
64			uning and with	

64

## Declension of anja

146. The Classic Armenian has unfu this, penfu that, unfu that, besides unju, unjų, unfu, um, quu, um. In Modern Armenian unju is used in the meaning "the same".

147. The Demonstrative  $\sum_{n \in I} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \sum_{j=1}^{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \sum_{j=1}^{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \sum_{j=1}^{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \sum_{i=1}$ 

Adjective	:			
	Singular		Plural	
N.A. Նոյն ան	an the same person	ា <i>ឯក្សារ ណារ</i> ង៍	երը	the same p.
G. D. նոյն ան	เส [เน of, to	նոյն անձ	երուն	of, to
Abl. ungh unh	afs from	նոյն անձ	երէն	from
Inst. unju mu	<b>ઢનાન્</b> with	նոյն անձ	երով	with
Pronoun:				
N. A. <i>Նոյնը</i>	the same one	Նոյները	the sa	me ones
G. D. նոյնին	of, to	նոյներուն	of, to	
Abl. unjuçu	from	նոյներէն	from	
Inst. unjund	with	նոյներով	with	

Note: The Classic Genitive of uny is unphi. This form is used in such expressions as: Unphi 4 thim funne Philip His Majesty, Unphi Uppne Philip His Holiness, Unphi Stone Philip His Lordship.

#### RELATIVE PRONOUNS — ՑԱՐԱԲԵՐԱԿԱՆ ԴԵՐԱՆՈՒՆ

148. The Relative Pronoun is  $n_{l'}$  (vor) who, which. It refers to persons and things alike.

149. It is declined as follows:

	Sing	ular	Plural	
N.	יות	who, which	որոնը	who, which
A.	qnp (np)	whom, which	(ๆ) กุกกับ ( ๆ กุก บ)	whom, which
<b>G.</b> D.	որուն	whose; of, to	որոնց	whose; of, to
Abl.	որմէ	from	որոնցմէ	from
Inst.	וחקיי	with	որոնցմով	with

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS — แบกกกร จะกินบกคน

150. The Indefinite Pronouns are: nd np,  $hu_{\xi} np$ . Declined, the Relative np supplies the lacking Cases of nd.

#### Paradigm

	Singular	Plura	al	
N.	ով որ	որոնը որ	יייי	whoever
A.	ղով որ	(զ)որոնը, զո		whomever
G. D.	որուն որ	որոնց որ		whosever, to
Abl.	որմէ որ	որոնցմէ որ		from
Inst.	որով որ	որոնցմով որ		with
N.	ինչ որ	ինչեր որ	whatever	
A.	ինչ որ	ինչեր որ	whatever	
G. D.	ինչու որ	ինչերու որ	of, to	
Abl.	ինչէ որ	ինչերէ որ	from	
Inst.	ինչէ որ	ինչերով որ	with	

151. The Classic *nflu* somebody, is used in the form  $uf_{\mu}$  *nflu* a certain — Nominative Singular. The Singular Cases of *nflu* are not used, whereas the Plural Declension of *nfulling* is accepted in modern language:

N.	ாபீ யப் உ	some
Α.	ฤกป์ เมโบบ	some
<b>G</b> . D.		of, to
Abl.	ոմանցմէ	from
Inst.	กสามบิฐสุกป	with

152. The Negative of Classic  $n_{\ell}$  someone is  $n_{\ell} n_{\ell}$  nobody, and of  $h_{\ell}$  something is  $n_{\ell} h_{\ell}$  nothing. They are declined like he Nouns of the First Declension.

N.	ாத நூ	no one	ոչինչ	nothing
А.	ாத் ஏர் ஓ	no one	n 5 h L 5	nothing
G. D.	пу прр	of, to	ոչինչի	of, to
Abl.	ný ngt	from	n>pu>5	from
Inst.	ாத எழாபு	with	ոչինչով	with

Note: "2/2 Jury a good-for-nothing; "222" Phil nothingness.

153. The following Indefinite Pronouns are indeclinable as Adjectives, but as Substantives they are declined and take the Definite Article.

154. Substantive Indefinite Pronoun: hepuputishepp:

N. A.	իւրաջանչիւրը	every one
<b>G.</b> D.	իւրաջանչիւրին	of, to
Abi.	իւրաջանչիւրէն	from
Inst.	իւրաջանչիւրով	with

But as Adjective:

իւրաջանչիւր մարդ, G.D. մարդու, Abl. մարդէ, Inst. մարդով every single man etc.

155. Substantive Indefinite Pronoun: udfu dfup:

<b>N.</b> A.	ամէն մէկը	everyone
G. D.	ամէն մէկուն	of, to
Abl.	ամէն մէկէն	from
Inst.	ամէն մէկով	with

But as Adjective:

unftu stu uzultenm, G. D. uzultenmh, Abl. uzultenmt, Inst. uzultenmnd every single pupil.

1	56. Substan	ntive Indefi	nite Pronoun:	միւսը։
N. A.	միւսը	the other	միւսները	the others
<b>G</b> . D.	វៀកភាពិ	of, to	մ իւսներուն	of, to
Abl.	միւսէն	from	միւսներէն	from

Inst. *d ficund* with *d ficulting* with But as Adjective:

157. Substantive Indefinite Pronoun: papapa:

N. A.	բոլորը	all
G. D.	բոլորին	of, to
Abl.	enIngtu	from
lnst.	եպնոնով	with

But as Adjective primp is indeclinable. With a Noun in Singular it means "whole"; with a Noun in Plural it means "all" Singular: primp purpupp, G.D. purpuppi, Abl. purpupti, : Inst. purpuprif the whole town, etc.

5\*

Plural: ening emqueblege, G. D. emquebleget, Abl. emqueblegt, Inst. emquebleget all the towns, etc.

158. Substantive Indefinite Pronoun: und pung & p:

N. A.	ամբողջը	the entire
	ամբողջին	of, to
	ամբողջէն	from
Inst.	ամբողջով	with

But as Adjective, indeclinable: <u>mdpngl pmqmpp</u> the entire town; <u>mdpngl pmqmpbbpp</u> the entire towns.

159. Substantive Indefinite Pronoun: , mmp:

N. A.	չատը	much	չատերը	many
<b>G</b> . D.	չատին	of, to	չատերուն	o,to
Abl.	շատէն	from	շատերէն	from
Inst.	շատով	with	չատերով	with

But as Adjective, indeclinable:

yuun dunn or yuun un dunn hu many people.

160. The Indefinite Pronoun *pull of p* (some) is Substantive in the Plural and is declined, but it is Adjective in the Singular and is indeclinable. Substantive:

N. A.	քանիներ	some
G. D.	` <i>բանիներու</i>	of, to
Abl.	ջանիներէ	from
Inst.	քանիներով	with

Adjective: emil se some persons.

161. Substantive Indefinite Pronoun: und fup, und fupp:

N. A.	ամէնը	all	ամէնքը	all
G. D.	ամէնուն	of, to	ամէնքին	of, to
Abl.	ամէնէն	from	ՠֈֈՠֈֈ	from
Inst.	ամէնով	with	ամէնքով	

Note:  $w \notin f h_{\ell}$  and  $w \notin f h_{\ell} h_{\ell}$  have the same meaning: The First is in Singular, the Second in Plural form, but both have Plural meaning.

As an Indeclinable Adjective  $\omega d\xi b$  only is in use. With a Singular Noun it means "every":  $\omega d\xi b d\omega p \eta$  every man; with a Plural Noun it means "all":  $\omega d\xi b d\omega p \eta f \eta \eta$  all men. But in this case, it is better to use  $p m_{L} m p$ .

## INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS — ՀԱՐՑԱԿԱՆ ԴԵՐԱՆՈՒՆ

162. The Indefinite Pronouns  $m_{\ell}$ ,  $h_{\ell}$ ,  $m_{\ell}$ ,  $\mu_{\mu}$ ,  $\mu_{\mu}$  are used as Interrogative Pronouns. As such they have the question mark:  $n^{\alpha} \ell$  who?  $h_{\ell}$  what?  $n^{\alpha} \mu$  who?  $\mu_{\mu}$  how much? The Interrogative meaning of these Pronouns is the original one.

163. The Interrogative  $n^{\alpha} d$  and  $n p n^{\alpha} b_{\alpha}$  are used substantively and declined thus:

	Sin	gular
N. A.	ո՞վ, դո՞վ	who? whom?
G. D.	որո՞ւն	whose? of, to whom?
Abl.	որմէ՞	from whom?
Inst.	որո՞վ	with whom?
	Plu	ral
N. A.	որո՞նք, գորո՞նք	who? whom?
G. D.	որո՞նց	whose? of, to whom?
Abl.	กๆกับผู้มี6ุ°	from whom?
Inst.	ก็ตกันฐนัก°ิป	with whom?

165. As Substantive Pronouns they are declined thus:

a	) Singular		Plural
N. A.	ի°ъչ	what?	ինչե <sup>°</sup> ր what (things)?
	ինչո°ւ, ինչի°	of, to, for	hust pnor of, to, for
	ինչէ՞	from	huseps from
Inst.	ինչո՞վ	with	ինչերո°վ with
b)	)	Singular	
N. A.	""" ("""), q	", who? what	at?
	որո՞ւն	whose? of	
Abl.	որմէ՞ն	from who	m?
Inst.	ןי°חיו ח	with who	m?

	P	lural
N. A.	որո՞նք, զորո՞նք	who? what?
G. D.	որո՞նց	whose? of, to whom?
Abl.	որոնցմէ՞	from whom?
Inst.	ก็แก่นี้มีมีก็เป	with whom?
c)	Singular	Plural
N. A.	<i>ஓய</i> ம் <b>ந</b> ீ how much	h? <b>ջանինե</b> °ր how many?
G.D.	சயம் h h ° of, to	<i>քանիներո</i> °∟of, to
Abl.	<i>բանիէ</i> <sup>°</sup> from	ewshiphers from
Inst.	քանիո°վ with	eus hut pro fwith

RECIPROCAL PRONOUNS — ՓՈԽԱԴԱՐՁ ԴԵՐԱՆՈՒՆ

166. The Reciprocal Pronouns are (q) h p m p and d f h p q d f h one another.

They have no Nominative and no Singular. Although the Declension is in the Singular form, the meaning is Plural. Subject and Verb are Plural also: *pupper light they* help one another; *if tupper they* they praise one another.

N.				
Α.	(զ)իրար	one another	մէկըդմէկ	one another
G. D.	իրարու		ปรุนุก ปรุนุกะ	
Abl.	իրարմե	from	մէկը մէկէ	
	իրարմով		մէկը մէկով	

Note: The Article of style is essential; the letter r (Classical Prefix forming the Accusative Case) should not appear in the other cases — which it does in popular speaking.

## REFLEXIVE PRONOUNS — ԱՆԴՐԱԴԱՐՁ ԴԵՐԱՆՈՒՆ

167. The Personal Pronouns are used as Reflexives with the Nominative preceding and the other Cases following. Instead of  $L_{u,qmc}$ , the Third Person ( $h_{u,q}$ ) also can be used. The personal articles (u, q) must be attached to it: -u for the First, -q for the Second Person.

• •

a)	Paradi Singula		
N. A. G. D. Abl. Inst.	ես զիս ինքս ես իմ ինքս ես ինծի ինքս ես ինծմէ ինքս ես ինծմէ ինքս	իմ ot ինծի to ինծմէ from	
	Plural	l	
N. A. G. D. Abl. Inst.	ជដរម្ភ ជួនជា ជិដរៈខ្លួ ជិដិក្រ បេ ជិដរៈខ្លួ ជិដជូវីដ្ដ ដែ ជិដរៈខ្លួ ជិងជួរី ដោ	o rom with	
b) N.	Singu		
A. G. D. Abl. Inst.	ուուն թու ին	စုပာ ရမ္နာရ thyself စုပာ စုပာ of စုပာ စုမ်းရာက to စုပာ စုမ်းရာကီ from စုပာ စုမ်းရာကီက် with	
	Plur		
N. A. G. D. Abl. Inst.	תחיר קלדק תחיר לדף תחיר לדקף תחיר לדקלל תחיר לדקלחל	yourselves of to from with	
с		Plural	
Ν. Α. [ <sup>1</sup> <sup>1</sup> μ <sub>2</sub> G. [ <sup>1</sup> <sup>1</sup> μ <sub>2</sub> D. [ <sup>1</sup> μ <sub>2</sub> Abl. [ <sup>1</sup> μ <sub>2</sub>	africe him(her)self	— իրենք զիրենք իրենք իրենց իրենք իրենց իրենք իրենցմէ իրենք իրենցմով	themselves of to from with

sleave al

# VERBS — ALS

168. The part of speech expressing action is called "Verb" *pug.* Through Conjugation the Verb expresses Voice, Mood, Tense, Person, and Number.

169. The "Numbers" *Jept* are two: *Equilip* Singular, if the acting Person, the Subject, is one; *jequulp* Plural, if the Subjects are many.

### PERSONS — ԴԷՄՔ

170. The Persons are three for each Number: Equip mnughi First Singular: Eu 1; Equip Ephpnpa Second Singular: ant thou; Equip Eppnpa Third Singular: fige or with or with the she, it; jnatur for multi first Plural: detug we; jnatur for Ephpnpa Second Plural: ant you; jnatur for Eppnpa Third Plural: wint or forting they.

## MOODS — ԵՂԱՆԱԿ

171. The Moods are four:

- 1) Umsdunuu und Indicative: the action appears as a fact;
- 2) Zpundugun lun Imperative: the action is a command, an order;
- 4) Usepheng H Infinitive, the Mood of the abstract action.
- 72

172. The Voices of the Verb are:

- 2fqne Intransitive (Neuter), the Verb has no need of a Complement (of a Direct Object): emiltip to walk;
- 2) **bergandouluur** Transitive, the Verb needs a Direct Object as its Complement: **child** — unuch to build — a house;
- 3) **4***pminpm4mu* Passive, the Subject of the Verb is the Object of another's action: *4pmihpmihj* to be invited;
- 4) *U*<sub>μ</sub>ημημηδ</sub> Reflexive, the Subject of the Verb acts upon itself as Object: ηημη μυρ ημυρη to praise himself;
- 5) **9***mmsmmuluub* Causative or Factitive, the Verb expresses the action of a Person through another: *μερηρύει* to make eat.

#### TENSES — ԺԱՄԱՆԱԿ

173. The action can take place either in the Past *whytewl*, or in the Present *htpluy*, or in the Future *whytewl*, whence the Three Tenses of the Indicative. In each of these Three Tenses the action is either completed or incomplete (continued):

- 1) **Userly** Present expresses incomplete action in the Present. **Burnuly** Perfect expresses completed action in the Pres.
- Uulummp Imperfect expresses the incomplete action in the Past.
   Pupulummp Pluperfect expresses the completed action in the P.
- 3) Unumble First Future expresses the incomplete action in the F.
   1) Unghul mumble Second Future expresses the completed action in the Future.

174. There is one more Tense in the Indicative Mood in which the completed action, the fact is stressed without regard to Past or Present. This Tense is called *fummerbule*. It literally means Perfect but corresponds to the Greek Aorist or the French Passé Défini, or the English Simple Past, especially its emphatic form: *angligh* I closed, I did close. 175. The Subjunctive Mood (including Optative and Conditional) has two Tenses: *Upplung* Present, which is a virtual Future; *Upplung* Past.

ophatif ( + , ( which

176. The Imperative Mood has only the Present, and one Person in each Number: the Second Person, both Singular and Plural.

177. Aorist, Subjunctive Present and Past, are Simple Tenses; all the other Tenses are compound, being formed with the help of Particles ( $4\mu$  for Present and Imperfect Indicative;  $\mu\mu\mu\mu$  for Future) or the Auxiliary Verb  $\mu d$  for the Perfect and Pluperfect. The Imperative Mood also is not compound.

178. The abstract action, without relation to Person, Number, Mood, is expressed by the Infinitive. It can be used and declined as a Noun.

179. Armenian Verbs have the following Participles:

1) **UEPHung PEPPung** Present Participle

2) 4mmmphan J. F. Perfect Participle

3) Umunuh Permu Future Participle

They are all Verbal Nouns and Adjectives and may be used as Verbs, Substantives, or Adjectives.

## AUXILIARY VERBS — በታሀኒኁዚዓ ቦሀ3

180. The Auxiliary Verbs in Armenian are: *Ed* I am; <u>*pllml*</u> to become, to be; *Equilip* to become.

181. The Auxiliary Verb Ld is defective. It has the Present and Imperfect Indicative only. Ld forms its Present and Imperfect Indicative without the Particle  $4\mu$ .

**182.** The auxiliary verb  $\mu_{II}$  is also defective. It has the Present and Imperfect Indicative and Subjunctive, Future and Present Participles, and the Infinitive.

The  $\underline{\mu}$  of the Particle  $\underline{\mu}$  is ellided  $(\underline{\mu}')$  before  $\underline{\mu}$   $\underline{\mu}$   $\underline{\mu}$ ,  $\underline{\mu}$   $\underline{\mu}$ 

74

183. The verb  $l_{\eta}$  with supplies the wanting tenses of  $l_{\eta}$  and  $\underline{r_{ll}}$ , namely, the Aorist, Imperative, Present Participle.  $l_{\eta}$  with is not used in Present and Imperfect Indicative and Subjunctive.

Its Infinitive also is obsolete.

184. The Personal Pronouns can be omitted before the Verb. The Persons are indicated by the Personal Endings added to the Verb-stem. They are:

Singular Person Present Imperfect 1 st \_\_\_\_f -/-2nd \_\_\_\_ -40 3rd no ending, but one of the vowels  $\xi$ , h, -11 my, m, according to the Verb-stem Plural 1 st -10.0 –ինք 2nd-e -u -þ\_£ 3rd -45 See Personal Endings of Aorist 273, 274. Paradigm 185. Conjugation of *L*J I am: Present Indicative Negative ( = ) haf lam I am not 561 (1.11.11) Lu thou art 56 प etc. (ան, ինբր) Ł he, she, it is sŧ (11-61.0) hup we are stup (ппср) ζe you are Ste (անոնը, են they are >են իրենթ) Imperfect Indicative Negative 5/-I was 55 fr I was not 5/1 thou wast sthr etc. ξp he, she, it was 55 p *էի*նը we were չէինը 5pe you were they were չէին

186. Conjugation of <u>*Pll*</u> to be, become :

Present	
Indicative	
l become, l grow	րլլամ
thou	ell <sup>wu</sup>
he, she, it	<u>ըլլայ</u>
we	<i>ԸԼԼ<sup>ան</sup>Ք</i>
you	<u>EIL<sup>m</sup>e</u>
they	<i>ըլլան</i>
Imperfect	
l became, I grew	ըլլայի
thou	<i>ըլլայի</i> ը
he, she, it	<u>ell</u> me
e we	<i>ըլլայի</i> ն <sub>ք</sub>
you	<i>ըլլայի</i> ք
they	ըլլային
	ative I become, I grow thou he, she, it we you they I m p e r f_e c t I became, I grew thou he, she, it e we you

Note: All translations of the Subjunctive are misleading, and hence none is given. It may imply wish, condition, possibility, reality, impossibility, unreality. See Syntax.

		First	Future			
պիտի	ըլլամ	l shall be, t	oecome	պիտի	<i>ըլլան</i> ք	we
պիտի	<u>ELL</u> <sup>mu</sup>	thou		պիտի	ЕШш₽	you
պիտի	<u>ell</u> uj	he, she, it		պիտի	ըլլան	they
		Secon	d Future			
եղած	պիտի	րլլամ	l shall hav	e been,	become	
եղած	պիտի	ell <sup>mn</sup>	thou			
եղած	պիտի		he, she, it	:		
եղած	պիտի	ըլլանք	we			
եղած	պիտի	<u>ГШ</u> ше	you			
եղած	պիտի	ըլլան	they			
		First Co	nditiona	1		
պիտի	ըլլայի	,	I should t	be, beco	me	
պիտի	ellugh	l.	thou			
պիտի	<i>ĽĽĽ<sup></sup>Ľľ</i>		he, she, it			
պիտի	ellwyh	նը	we			
պիտի	<u>ըլլայի</u>	£	you			
պիտի	<u>ըլլայի</u>	រ	they			

Second եղած պիտի ըլլայի եղած պիտի ըլլայիր եղած պիտի ըլլար եղած պիտի ըլլային եղած պիտի ըլլային	he, she, it e we		
Infinitive: <u>relieve</u> to be, to become Present Participle: ( <u>relinn</u> ) being, that which is Future Participle: <u>reliment</u> , <u>reliment</u> that which will be, become			
187. Wanting forms are	supplied by hymulp to become:		
Aorist (Past Definit	e) Negative		
hym I became, I wa			
Equip thou	Engun thou		
he, she, it	¿taque he, she, it		
եղանը we	չեղանը we		
<i>եղալ</i> ջ you	¿Епше you		
<i>եղան</i> they	<i>ولت بينان</i> they		
Perfect			
(եղեր) եղած եմ	I have been		
	thou		
	he, she, it		
	we		
	you		
(եղեր) եղած են	they		
Pluperfect			
(եղեր) եղած էի	I had been		
	thou		
	he, she, it		
(եղեր) եղած էինը			
	you		
	they		
Imperative: Sing, <i>Laha</i> be Plur, <i>Laka</i> be			

Imperative: Sing. Lypp be, Plur. Lyfp be.

Note: The Prohibitive is formed with  $\underline{r}_{ll}\underline{w}_{l}$ : Sing.  $J_{l'}\underline{r}_{ll}\underline{w}_{l'}$  be (thou) not, Plur.  $J_{l'}\underline{r}_{ll}\underline{w}_{l'}$  be ye not.

Present Participle:  $L_{\eta m \eta}$  that which is, becomes. Past Participle:  $L_{\eta m \theta}$ ,  $L_{\eta L \eta}$  been, become.

Use of byuð — bybp

188. In Perfect or Pluperfect, either  $l_{\eta}u\delta$  or  $l_{\eta}l_{\rho}$  can be used. But neither in Second Future nor in Second Conditional is the form  $l_{\eta}l_{\rho}$  allowed. However,  $l_{\eta}l_{\rho}$  may be added to any tense ( $l_{\rho}l_{l}uud$   $l_{\eta}l_{\rho}$ ,  $l_{\rho}l_{l}uujh$   $l_{\eta}l_{\rho}$ ,  $u_{h}uh$   $l_{l}uud$   $l_{\eta}l_{\rho}$ ,  $l_{\eta}ub$   $u_{h}uh$   $l_{l}uud$   $l_{\eta}l_{\rho}$ ) denoting uncertainty, the opinion of others, indirect quotation.

Only the form  $E_{\eta \mu}\delta$  can be used as Adjective or Substantive:

**μημό μημό μημμί μ** the work done is praiseworthy **μημό μημμηβμ** I told what happened.

THE THREE CONJUGATIONS — ԵቦԵዳ ԽՈՆԱՐՀՈՒՄՆԵՐԸ

189. There are in Modern Armenian Three Conjugations, distinguished from each other by the vowel in the termination of the Present Infinitive. They are:

Conjugation	Infinitive Termination	Sign — Vowel
I	-61	Ŀ
11	-/-/	þ
III		с ш

190. The majority of Primary Verbs are of the First Conjugation  $(-E_I)$  with Active (Transitive) meaning.

191. The Second Conjugation  $(-h_{l})$  comprises Intransitive and all Passive Verbs. Some Verbs of this Conjugation are Active:  $[unp \leq h_{l}$  to think,  $[uouh_{l}]$  to speak,  $[unp \leq h_{l}]$  to receive,  $uhuh_{l}$  to begin.

192. Few Verbs of the Third Conjugation  $(-m_l)$  are primary: the majority is of secondary (derivative) formation with some peculiarities in the inflection.

#### VERBS IN -በኮኒ

193. The Classic Armenian has a Fourth Conjugation ending in  $-nL_{l}$ . In Modern Armenian, Verbs in  $-nL_{l}$  are rare and are regarded as irregular.

#### DERIVATIVE VERBS - UDUISDUL PUB

194. Derivative (Secondary) Verbs are formed with the letters  $\mathfrak{L}$ ,  $\mathfrak{L}$ ,  $\mathfrak{gpL}$ ,  $\mathfrak{m}$  inserted between the Present Stem and the Infinitive Termination. The letters  $\mathfrak{L}$  and  $\mathfrak{L}$  appear only in Tenses and Moods formed from the Present Stem, and drop in Tenses and Moods formed from the Aorist Stem. The letters  $\mathfrak{g}$ ,  $\mathfrak{m}$  are kept in all Tenses and Moods.

Derivatives with -u-

195. First Conjugation:

₽-m-u-t-[ [v2-u-t-[ mt-u-u-t-]	to find to descend to see	(Classic: գտանել) (Classic: իջանել) (Classic: տեսանել)
Second Conj	ugation :	<b>-</b>
անց-ն-իլ	to pass	(Classic: <i>անցանել</i> )
4 un - u - h	to arrive	(Classic: Հասանել)
Eurn-n-h-h	to spring	(Classic: encumber)

196. The Third Conjugation has the majority of Derivates with  $-\underline{\nu}$ . In Classic Armenian,  $\underline{\nu}$  is preceded by the vowel  $\underline{\mu}$ which is suppressed now in Verbs of the First and Second, but kept in many Verbs of the Third Conjugation.  $-\underline{\nu}$  denotes a change of physical or mental, material or spiritual quality in the Verbs of the Third Conjugation.

a)

 $\mu m p - m b - m l$ to become stone, to be petrified $\eta m n b - m b - m l$ to become bitter, to turn sour $\lambda m p (n L) um - m b - m l$ to become wealthy, richn p p - m b - m lto become orphan $\mu l p p - m b - m l$ to come to an end $\mu m L (m) b m l$ to heal

թոյլ(ա)նալ (թուլնալ)	to	weaken
մեծ(ա)նալ		become great, -famous, -old
ղիը(ա)նալ		get fat
կոյընալ (կուրանալ)	to	become blind
ծոյլնալ (ծուլանալ)	to	become lazy

b) These are Intransitive Verbs, but there are some Transitives also with the Derivative  $-\Sigma$ -

[սոստա_ն_ալ			Հասկ(ա)նայ	to	understand
ստա_ն_ալ	to	receive	մոռ(ա)նալ		
ուրա–ն–ալ	to	deny	สุกๆ (ม) ในมา		

Derivatives with - --

197. Verbs with an inserted  $-\xi$ - occur in the Second Conjugation and are Intransitive:

Հանդ-չ-իլ		4-	to stick
փախ-չ-իլ	to flee	4mm-5-61	to cling to [frightend
pn-s-pl	to fly	וא-צ-חייו על	to be scared, to be
4-2-1-1	to stick	Pup-2-p	to hide (more common:
41-2-1-1	to crumble		պահուրտիլ)
<u>4-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1</u>	to touch	մատ_չ_իլ	to approach (more com-
			mon: domtum)

Derivatives with -gpu-

199. The Verbs of the Three Conjugations may change their Voice by inserting  $-g_{l}\omega_{-}$  (from Classic  $-g_{l}\omega_{-}$ ): Intransitives change to Transitives, Transitives to Causatives. The Infinitive Termination of the Derivatives with  $-g_{l}\omega_{-}$  is  $-k_{l}$ . They are all inflected according to the First Conjugation.

կարդալ Ք <sup>նանա</sup> լ		to make read, study to make sleep, to put
		to sleep

*μρμ*<sub>L</sub> to like, love *μρημύμ*<sub>L</sub> to make lovable *μουμ*<sub>L</sub> to speak *μουμημ*<sub>L</sub> to make speak See other Verbs in -*ημμ*<sub>L</sub> 279.

200. The vowel  $\mu$  of the Second Conjugation is changed to  $\mu$  before  $-g\mu u - : \mu ouh_L - \mu ouhg\mu uh_L$ .

**201.** By inserting  $-g\mu\nu$  almost every Intransitive Verb can be changed to a Transitive Verb — except those Intransitives which have a corresponding Transitive:

202. Few Transitive Verbs change to Causatives by inserting  $-g_{ll}$ . Instead of that, the Verb  $mu_{ll}$  is added to the Infinitive of Transitive Verbs. The Infinitives remain unchanged and  $mu_{ll}$  alone is inflected:  $fu_{ll}p_{ll} l_{ll}$  mull lam having (it) cleaned;  $fu_{ll}p_{ll} l_{ll}$  mull have (it) cleaned;  $fu_{ll}p_{ll} l_{ll}$  mult lam having (it) cleaned;  $fu_{ll}p_{ll} l_{ll}$  have (it) cleaned;  $fu_{ll}p_{ll} l_{ll}$  mult lam having (it) cleaned is cleaned in the lambda have (it) cleaned in the lambda have (it) cleaned is cleaned in the lambda have (it) cleaned in the lambda have (it) cleaned is cleaned in the lambda have (it) cleaned in the lambda have (it) cleaned in the lambda have (it) cleaned is cleaned in the lambda have (it) cleaned in the lam

**203.** Instead of the modern  $-g_{l}b_{l}$  its Classic Original  $-m_{g}wb_{l}$  appears in  $\zeta_{wunneg}wb_{l}$  to remunerate,  $\mathscr{J}_{wunneg}wb_{l}$ to offer. The strict modern form of  $\zeta_{wunneg}wb_{l}$  would be  $\zeta_{wun-g}wb_{l}$  would be  $\zeta_{wun-g}wb_{l}$  which however means to "exhaust" in Modern Armenian, formed from the Classic Intransitive  $\zeta_{wunw}b_{l}d$  to be through, exhausted.

Derivatives with -----

**204.** The inserted -m - (-mm -, -mm -) forms Frequentative or Intensive Verbs — denoting a repeated or energetic action. They follow the First Conjugation  $(-mh_I)$ .

կոտըել	to break	<i>կոտը</i> _տ_եյ	to	break into pieces
կոիսել	to step	$\dot{\boldsymbol{\mu}}_{\boldsymbol{\mu}}$ / $\boldsymbol{\mu}_{\boldsymbol{\mu}}$ - $\boldsymbol{n}$ $\boldsymbol{n}_{\boldsymbol{\mu}}$ - $\boldsymbol{h}_{\boldsymbol{\mu}}$	to	trample upon
		կոխ-կր-տ-ել		
կտըել	to cut	կտր-ա-ել	to	cut into pieces
պատռել	to rend	պատոտել	to	rend into pieces, split
				asunder

# PRESENT AND AORIST STEM ՆԵՐԿԱՑ ԵՒ ԿԱՏԱՐԵԱԼ ԱՐՄԱՏ

205. The Tenses and the Moods of the Regular Verbs are formed either from the Present or from the Aorist Stem.

#### Present Stem

206. The Present Stem is found by dropping the terminations of the Infinitive  $-k_1$ ,  $-h_1$ ,  $-m_1$ :

Infinitive		Present Stem
ղործ-ել	to work	գործ —
hon-hi	to speak	јион —
Pres-pl	to fly	Fng
<i>шղ–ш</i> [	to grind	ш <i>п</i> —
<u>4</u> n1-2-m1	to steal	4ողն

207. On the Present Stem are formed: Indicative and Subjunctive Present, Imperfect, Future, Conditional, Prohibitive, Present and Future Participles, Infinitive. The Verbs  $-\underline{k}_{l}$ ,  $-\underline{p}_{l}$ ,  $-\underline{m}\underline{k}_{l}$  $(-\underline{n}\underline{m}-, -\underline{m}\underline{m}-)$  form their Perfect Participles also on the Present Stem. The Verbs in  $-\underline{m}_{l}$  are the only ones to form their Present Participles on the Aorist Stem.

#### Aorist Stem

**208.** The Aorist Stem is found by changing the ending -L of the Infinitive of Primary Verbs to -g. The h of the Infinitive  $-h_L$  becomes L:

Infinitive	Aorist Stem
գործել	դործեց
hont	Juouty —
կարդալ	կարդաց —

**209.** The Secondary Verbs of the First and Second Conjugation with the infixed  $-\nu_{-}$ ,  $-\epsilon_{-}$  form their Aorist Stem by dropping the inserted letter and the Infinitive Ending:

Infinitive	Aorist Stem
տես–ն–ել	mbu
pa-e-pl	[In

82

. )

¢

**210.** In some Verbs the letters  $\mathcal{L}$  or  $\mathcal{L}$  are parts of their Present Stem. Being Primary Verbs, they form their Aorist Stem according to **208**:

Infinitive		Aorist Stem
առը-բն		<u>բռն-եց</u> —
հիմն–ել		Հիքն–եց –
կանչ–ել	to call	կանչ–եց ––

**211.** Secondary Verbs of the Third Conjugation with the inserted -(m)u form their Aorist Stem by changing u to g and dropping the infinitive ending:

Infinitive		Aorist Stem
մեծ(ա)նալ	to grow	մեծ(ա)ց —
Հիւանդ(ա)նալ	to become sick	Հիւանդ (ա)ց —

**212.** In some Verbs the syllable  $-\mu_1 \bar{\nu}_-$  is a part of the Present Stem. They are Primary Verbs and they form the Aorist Stem according to **208**. Such Verbs with  $-\mu_1 \bar{\nu}_-$  in the Present Stem are:

a) Infinitive		Aorist Stem
սերման–ել	to sow	սերմանեց
խուփան–ել	to hinder	խուփանեց
կործան–ել	to ruin	կործանեց —
բաժ(ա)ն–ել	to distribute	բաժ(ա)նեց —
ժաման–ել	to arrive	ժամանեց —
ղալոման–ել	to cure, to foster	ղարմանեց —
b)		
ապաստան–իլ	to take refuge	ապաստանեց —
խոստովան-իլ	to confess	խոստովանեց —
վարան–իլ	to hesitate	վարանեց —
հաւան-իլ	to agree	Հաւանեց —
հաւնիլ	to find pleasant	Հաւնեց ๊—

Note: The Verbs mentioned in 210, 212 are formed from Nouns in which -b- is radical and therefore it appears both in Present and Aorist Stems:  $r^{max}$  fist,  $-br^{max}$  foundation, whrdh seed,  $r^{mrdwb}$  remedy, wmmwb refuge, etc.

a)

**213.** Verbs with the inserted  $-g_{\mu} \tilde{\nu}_{-}$  form their Aorist Stem by dropping the Infinitive ending and changing  $-g_{\mu}\tilde{\nu}_{-}$  to  $-g_{\mu}c_{\mu}$ :

Infinitive	Aorist Stem
Surfit-generate to make pleasant	Հաւնեցուց —
hunnunguht to make read	կարդացուց
hun my ht to make laugh	խնդացուց

**214.** Secondary Verbs with the inserted -un form the Aorist Stem like Primary Verbs (208).

Infinitive	Aorist Stem
կոտը–ա–ել	կուռըտեց
կոիսկը–ա–ել	կոխկրտեց

**215.** On the Aorist Stem are formed: Aorist and Imperative, Perfect Participle of all Verbs – except the Primary Verbs in  $-h_L$ ,  $-h_L$ and the Secondary in  $-m_-$  ( $-nm_ -mm_-$ ). The Verbs in  $-m_L$ are the only ones to form their Present Participle also on the Aorist Stem.

#### PARADIGMS

**216.** The Present Indicative of all Verbs is formed with the Sign-Vowel (189) and the Personal Endings (184) added to the Present Stem; the Particle  $4\mu$  (4' when the Verb begins with a Vowel) must precede the Verb.

Note: The Particle 42 is omitted with a fundal, bd, 4wd, 42bwd, nebbd, (See 181, 347, 372, 392, 394, 396).

217. First Conjugation: -E; Sign Vowel: -E-

Present Stem:	ղործ–	Present Stem: .	n6u-
կը դործեմ	I work, am wor- king, do work	կը տես–նեմ	I see, I am seeing, I do see
կը գործես՝	thou	կը տեսնես	thou
կը գործէ	he, she, it	կը տեսնէ	he, she, it
կը գործենք	we	կը տեսնենը	we
<u>ዛሮ ዋግሮծէ</u> ք	you	կը տեսնէք	you
կը գործեն	they	կը տեսնեն	they

Present Stem: 4	ոտըտ–	Pre	sent Stem: <i>[</i>	นอมไรฐนี–
կը կոտրտեմ	I shatter, do-, am -ing	4Ľ	โบงบธิรูบธิป	I make (another) speak
կը կոտրտես	thou	41	խօսեցնես	thou
կը կոտրտէ	he, she, it	40	խօսեցնէ	he, she, it
կը կոտրտենը	we	40	้บงมะ โมงมะ	ewe
կը կոտրտէք	you		ប្រទ័ព្ធភ្លំភ្លំ	
կը կոտրտեն	they	4 <u>C</u>	խօսեցնեն	they
· • •		_		

a) In like manner are conjugated all the verbs in  $-E_{l}$ :

Հան–ել	to	remove,	to raise	խմ-եյ	to drink
կանչ–ել	to	call		աղատ–ել	to set free
սպաս–ել	to	wait		(4่ามๆเมเทโรช	I free)
ղով_ել	to	praise		պարպ–ել	to empty
пга-рГ	to	want, to	will	քալ-ել	to walk
(4่านๆแก้	١v	want)			
բուս-ել	to	grasp			

See other Verbs in -4 204, 212 a.

218. Second Conjugation: -h; Sign Vowel: -h-

Present Stem: Juou-		Present Stem: Praz-	
կը խօսիմ	I speak, etc.	կը Թռչիմ	I fly, etc.
կը խօսիս	thou	կը Թռչիս	thou
կը խօսի	he, she, it	կը Թռչի	he, she, it
կը խօսինչ	we	կը Թռչին	we
կը խօսիչ	you	կը Թռչինք	you
կը խօսիչ	they	կը Թռչին	they

Present Stem: pn\_uu-

կը բուսնիմ		կը բուսնինք	we grow, etc.
կը բուսնիս		կը բուսնիք	you
կը բումնի	he <b>, she</b> , it	կը բուսնին	they

a) In like manner are conjugated all Verbs in  $-h_l$ ,  $-\xi h_l$ ,  $-\xi h_l$ ,

Հրաժարիլ	to renounce	Հնազանդիլ	to obey
ապրիլ	to live	նայիլ	to look
(կ՝ապրիմ	l live)	չահիլ	to gain; win
աչխատիլ	to work, labor	Հանդիպիլ	to meet
(կ՝աչխատիմ	I work)	աղատիլ	to escape
նուսիլ	to sit down	(կ՝աղատիմ	I escape)
բնակիլ	to dwell		

See other Verbs in  $-\mu_1$ ,  $-\mu_2/\mu_1$ ,  $-\mu_1/\mu_1$  191, 195, 197, 198.

Present Stem: 4mm-		Present Stem: dunu-		
կը կարդամ	l read, etc.	կը մոռնամ	I forget, etc.	
կը կարդաս	thou	կը մոռնաս	thou	
կը կարդայ	he, she, it	կը մոռնայ	he, she, it	
կը կարդանք	we	կը մոռնանը	we	
կը կարդաբ	you	կը մոռնաջ՝	you	
կը կարդան	they	կը մոռնան	they	

a) In like manner are conjugated all the Verbs in  $-w_L$ ,  $-bw_L$ :  $[\mu d w b w_L]$  to hear, understand  $d w [\mu b w_L]$  to fear  $(u' [\mu f w b w d']$  l understand)  $w d z b w u_L$  to be ashamed  $\delta w b z b w_L$  to know, to learn (u' w d' z b w d'] a mashamed) a f w b w w, to learn

See other verbs 196.

4nL instead of 4p

**220.** The monosyllabic Verbs  $\mu \mu l$  to cry,  $\mu \mu l$  to give,  $\mu \mu l$  to come, have the Particle  $\mu \mu l$  instead of  $\mu l$ :

ип. иив, ип. иши, ип. ишу etc. (see 371, 390, 400).

# Verbs in \_n\_j

**221.** A few Verbs of the Classic Fourth Conjugation  $(-mL_L, -LmL_L)$ , Sign Vowel:  $-mL_-$ ) are used in Modern Armenian and have a regular inflection in the Present and Imperfect:

Present Stem:	[ðnn	Present Stem: Lingh	<b>—</b> .
կը Թողում	I leave, etc.	կ'երդնում	I swear, etc.
կը Թողուս	thou	կ՝երդնուս	thou
կը Թողու	he, she, it	կ՝երդնու	h <b>e, s</b> he, i <b>t</b>
կը Թողունը	we	կ'երդնունը	we
կը Թողուք	you	կ՝երդնութ	you
կը Թողուն	they	կ՝երդնուն	they

a) In like manner are conjugated the Verbs in  $-n_{LI}$ ,  $-i_{nLI}$ :

			L' L
<i>ዋբ</i> օսնուլ	to recreate one's self	$\{ L\eta n L \}$	to shed
ទឹងការក្រ	to warm one's self	յաւելույ	to add
ղգենուլ	to dress one's self	րնթեռնուլ	to read
յենուլ	to lean upon, against		
0			

See other Verbs in -nLI, -LnLI 297.

## SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT — บรกคนจนบนงนน นธคงแอ

**222.** The Subjunctive Mood differs from the Indicative by the absence of the Particle  $\mu_{II}$  ( $\mu'$ ,  $\mu_{IIL}$ ).

Preceded by the Conjunction  $n_{II}$  that; L[J] if; the Subjunctive serves as Optative and Conditional. The translation of the Subjunctive varies widely according to the Conjunctions. Hence no translation of this Mood is given in the Paradigms.

		-ŀ-		
գործեմ	1	խոսիմ	կարդամ	Թողում
գործես	thou	իսօսիս	կարդաս	Budura
դործէ	he, she, it	Juouh	կարդայ	ผิกกุกเ
ղործենք	we	խօսինը	կարդանչք	Թողունը
417852	you	houhe	կարդաք	Finne
<i>ዋ ո ը ծ ե</i> ն	they	խօսին	կարդան	Թողուն

## INDICATIVE IMPERFECT — บนิยุบินันนุนุน แบนแรนก

223. The Imperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood of all Verbs is formed with the Personal Endings of Imperfect (184) and the Sign Vowel added to the Present Stem. The Particle  $\mu_{L}$  ( $\mu'$ ,  $\mu_{nL}$ ) must precede. The Sign Vowel of the Second Conjugation is  $-\xi$ -like that of the First Conjugation.

<b>224.</b> First	Conjugation	n: _ <b>L</b> ; Sign Vowel	: <b>{</b> -
Stem: 4ործ-		Stem: mhuu-	
4p 4np8-5h 4p 4np8-5h 4p 4np8-5h 4p 4np8-5h 4p 4np8-5h 4p 4np8-5h	thou he, she, it	կը տեսնէի կը տեսնէիր կը տեսնէր կը տեսնէին կը տեսնէին կը տեսնէին Տtem: խօսեցն-	I was seeing thou he, she, it we you they
կը կոտրտէի	I was shat- tering	կը խօսեցնէի	I was making (another) speak
կը կոտրտէիր կը կոտրտէր կը կոտրտէին, կը կոտրտէիչ կը կոտրտէիչ	thou he, she, it g we you they	կը խօսեցնէիր կը խօսեցնէր կը խօսեցնէին կը խօսեցնէին կը խօսեցնէին	thou he, she, it we you they
<b>225.</b> Seco	nd Conjugati	ion: <i>-µ</i> ; Sign Vov	vel: - <b>5</b> -
Stem: Juou-		Stem: Prez-	
կը խօսէի կը խօսէիր կը խօսէր կը խօսէինը կը խօսէինը կը խօսէին	l was speaking thou he, she, it we you they	կը Թռչէի կը Թռչէիր կը Թռչէր կը Թռչէինջ կը Թռչէիջ կը Թռչէիջ	I was flying thou he, she, it we you they
Stem: pn_uu-			
կը բուսնէի կը բուսնէիր կը բուսնէր	I was growing thou he, she, it	կը բուսնէին կը բուսնէիք կը բուսնէին	
226. Third Conjugation:			
Note: The Verbs in $-w_L$ insert , between the Sign Vowel and the Personal Endings, except the Third Person Singular.			

Stem: կարդ-		Stem: dnnu-	
կը կարդայի	I was reading	կը մոռնայի	Iwasforgetting
կը կարդայիր	thou	կը մոռնայիր	thou
կը կարդար	he, she, it	կը մոռնար	he, she, it

88

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2011

-

4 <u>C</u>	կարդայինը	we were	rea-	40	մոռնայինք	we	were	for-
40	կարդայիք	you	[ding	<u>4</u> Ľ	մոռնայիք	you	[ge	tting
40	կարդային	they		կը	մոռնային	they	,	

227. Verbs in -nu; Sign Vowel: -nu-

The Verbs ending in  $-m_L$  have the Sign Vowel  $m_L$  before the Personal Endings of the Imperfect.

Stem: pmg-		Stem: qpoub-	[good time
կը Թողուի	I was leaving	կը զբօսնուի	l was having
կը Թողուիր	thou	կը ղբօսնուիր	thou
կը Թողուր	he, she, it	կը ղբօսնուր	he, she, it
կը Թողուինք	we	կը ղրօսնուինք	we
կը Թողուիք	you	կը ղբօսնուիք	you
կը Թողուին	they	կը ղբօսնուին	they
Stem: երդն–			
կ՝երդնուի	I was swearing	կ՝երդնուինք	we were etc.
կ՝երդնուիր	thou	կ՝երդնուիք	you
կ'երդնուր	he, she, it	կ՝երդնուին	they

SUBJUNCTIVE IMPERFECT - บรกคนานบนนน แบนแมน

**228.** Like the Subjunctive Present, the Subjunctive Imperfect differs from the Indicative Imperfect only by the absence of the Particle  $4\mu$ . For the translation see **222**.

-5-	-5-		-71
գործէի	Juout Ji	կարդայի	Թողուի
ղործէիր	աօսէիր	կարդայիր	Թողուիր
ղործէր	աօսէ ը	կարդար	Թողուր
<i>գործէի</i> նք	լսօսէ ինք	կարդային <sub>ք</sub>	Թողուինք
<i>ਜ਼ਗ਼ਗ਼ਖ਼ਖ਼</i> ੵ	Juonthe	կարդայիք	Թողուիք
ዋግቦծէին	խօսէ ին	կարային	Թողուին

# FIRST FUTURE — ԱՊԱՌՆԻ

229. The Future is formed with the Particle  $u_{f}$  and the Subjunctive Present of the Verb.

230. First Conjugation: պիտի գործենը we etc. யு*իտի գործեմ* I shall work щрипр цпрови thou щрипр цпрови you щрипр цпров he, she, it щрипр цпрови they In like manner: պիտի տեսնեմ, պիտի կոտրտեմ, պիտի խօսեցնեմ, etc. 231. Second Conjugation: யுர்மார் Juouர்யீ I shall speak யுர்மார் பெலரிங்ற we etc. thou upun fr fuou fr g vou mhmh houhu thou thev պիտի խօսի In like manner: պիտի Թոչիմ, պիտի բուսնիմ, etc. 232. Third Conjugation: யுற்றை புறையி i shall read . யுற்றை புறையில் we etc. *պիտի կարդա*ջ you *պիտի կարդաս* thou mhinh hunnun they mhmh hmpnm he, she, it In like manner: պիտի մոռնամ, պիտի դառնամ, պիտի աղամ, etc. 233. Verbs in -nul. Verbs ending in -nLI follow the same pattern: அற்றை சொராடல் I shall leave அற்றை சொராடம் we etc. պիտի Թողութ you պիտի Թողուս thou պիտի Թողուն they պիտի Թողու he, she, it In like manner: պիտի հեղում, պիտի զբօսնում, պիտի երդնում etc.

# FIRST CONDITIONAL — ԹԷԱԿԱՆ

234. The First Conditional is formed by the Particle upmp and the Subjunctive Imperfect of the Verb.

235. First Conjugation: *upunp 4npdfp* 1 should work *upunp 4npdfpup* we etc. *upunp 4npdfpp* thou *upunp 4npdfpu* you *upunp 4npdfp* he, she, it *upunp 4npdfpu* they In like manner: *upunp mbuufp*, *upunp 4nmpufp*, *upunp poubgufp* etc.

-90

236. Second Conjugation: upunp pout i should speak upunp pout pue etc. upunp pout p thou upunp pout pout pout pout pout pout p upunp pout p he, she, it upunp pout pue they In like manner: upunp protocol, upunp pue up etc.

237. Third Conjugation: upunp upper I should read upunp upper we etc. upunp upper thou upunp upper you upunp upper he, she, it upunp upper they In like manner:

In like manner: պիտի մոռնայի, պիտի դառնայի, պիտի աղայի etc.

238. Verbs in -nul.

Verbs ending in -nL follow the same pattern:

# PROHIBITIVE — ԱՐԳԵԼԱԿԱՆ

**239.** Prohibition (negative command) is regularly expressed by the negative Particle J' p' put before the Second Person Singular and Plural of Present Subjunctive. The Personal Article of the Second Person Singular u is changed to p.

240. First Conjugation:

Sing. *sh'* ηπρδμρ do (thou) not work! Plur. *sh'* ηπρδμρ do (you) not work!

In like manner: մի' տեսներ, մի' տեսնէջ. մի' կոտրտեր, մի' կոտրտէջ, մի' խօսեցներ, մի' իսօսեցնէջ.

241. Second Conjugation: Sing. If fuoufp do (thou) not speak! Plur. If fuoufp do (you) not speak! In like manner: If Frishp, If Frishp. If preubfp, If preubfp. 242. Third Conjugation: Sing.  $dh' \mu \mu p \mu \mu$  do (thou) not read! Plur.  $dh' \mu \mu p \mu \mu$  do (you) not read! In like manner:  $dh' dnn u \mu$ ,  $dh' dnn u \mu$ .  $u \mu$ ,  $dh' \mu n u \mu$ . 243. Verbs in -nul. The same rule for the Verbs ending in -nul: Sing.  $dh' h \eta n \mu$  do (thou) not let! Plur.  $dh' h \eta n \mu$  do (thou) not let! In like manner:  $dh' \eta \mu ou u \mu$ ,  $dh' \eta \mu ou u \mu$ .  $u \mu$ ,  $dh' h \eta \eta \mu$ .

#### INFINITIVE — ԱՆԵՐԵՒՈՑԹ

**244.** The Present Infinitive is formed with the Present Stem the Sign Vowel L,  $\mu$ ,  $\mu$ , (nL) and the ending L.

245. First Conjugation:

under to work uninpundent to shatter under to see from the to make (another) speak, etc.

246. Second Conjugation:

fuouhi to speak, Anshi to fly, pneuuhi to shoot, etc.

247. Third Conjugation:

huppen to read d'nature to forget, etc.

**248.** Verbs in -nul:

[σημη[] to leave, ημουδη[] to have a good time, μημιη[] [to swear, etc,

Note: The Infinite can be used substantively and is declined according to the Second Declension. See 74 b. 75 b-e.  $\int_{D} \left( e^{\frac{1}{2}} + e^{-\frac{1}{2}} +$ 

## FUTURE PARTICIPLE — ԱՊԱՌՆԻ ԴԵՐԲԱՑ

**249.** The Future Participle is the Genitive of the Infinitive (75, b-c).

**250.** It can be used either as an Adjective or as a Substantive. As a Substantive it ends in  $-\mu_{P}$ :

# *uppmunc uppe of a book to be read* but: *uppmuppe* what I shall read

**251.** It implies obligation, necessity, corresponding to the Gerundive.

**252.** This Participle may be regarded as Dative expressing purpose:

นกะ นุพม พฤพระเกา I come to entreat นิษกศิษม มีธณระยุกะ they go to die.

253. First Conjugation: unpotine about to work unpoting to be done mhulthing about to se undulify something to be seen 254. Second Conjugation: houling about to speak Juouh hp something to be spoken about Hustin about to fly Frish he something to fly with 255. Third Conjugation: I'm hunger about to forget I'm hunghe something to be forgotten huppun about to read huppun he something to be read **256.** Verbs in -nu: Buylly something to be given *Hannal* about to leave up juit cope magnet It about to lean PRESENT PARTICIPLE - UBRYUS ABPRUS

**257.** The Present Participle is formed by the suffix  $-n\eta$  added to the Present Stem of First or Second, to the Aorist Stem of Third Conjugation.

**258.** As an Adjective, it is not declined, but as a Substantive it is like the First Declension. See **71** d.

259. The Armenian Present Participle does not exhaust the English. In order to express the abstract progress of the action in the Present, the Armenian must use the Instrumental of the Infini-

nitive: A working man  $= u_2 [uumnq umpq]$ , but: A man who earns his wage working = umpq upq upqumbind lppummup prodep. The Armenian Present Participle is almost obliterated as Verb, and has an extensive use as Adjectiveand Substantive (See 650).

260. First Conjugation:

Nom. *qapdaq* working, one who works Nom. *mhulung* seeing, one who sees.

261. Second Conjugation:

Nom.  $\mu_{ounq}$  speaking, one who speaks Nom.  $\mu_{n,jnq}$  flying, one who flies.

262. Third Conjugation:

*կшրղшցող* reading, one who reads *Inngnŋ* forgetting, one who forgets.

263. Verbs in -nul.

They form their Present Participle by -nq and the Present or the Aorist Stem.

ennnn (or ennnngnn) leaving, one who leaves εμηπιη (or εμηπιμύμηη) swearing, one who swears ημουύση or ημουση one who makes merry.

PERFECT PARTICIPLE - HUSUPBUL ABPRUS

**264.** The Perfect Participle of the Verbs ending in  $L_L$ ,  $L_L$ ,  $mL_L$  is formed by the suffix  $-m\delta$  or  $-L_P$  added to their Present Stem. All the other Verbs (Primary Verbs in  $-m_L$ , all the Secondaries, except those in  $-mL_I$ ) add  $-m\delta$   $(-L_P)$  to the Aorist Stem.

265. First Conjugation:

ңпрбшб — ңпрбեр	worked
	shattered
ասեցուցած — ասեցուցեր	made (another) speak.

266. Second Conjugation:

աօսած —	խօսեր	spoken
Թռած —	։ Թոեր՝	flied.

267. Third Conjugation:

կարդագած -- կարդագեր read մոռցած — մոռցեր forgotten.

268. Verbs in -nul:

They use the Aorist Stem: Annud or Annugud left, երդուած or երդուրնդած sworn, լեղած leaned, դրօսած having had a good time.

**269.** The Perfect Participle as Adjective is not declined: as a Noun, it is declined and follows the First Declension (see 71 d).

**270.** The Perfect Participle ending in  $-L_{\mu}$  is used as Verb (in compound tenses) only, never as Adjective nor as Noun. Hence, it is indeclinable

Classic Perfect Participle

271. The Classic Perfect Participle ends in -Lun. It is used as Adjective or Substantive:

whytew muph or why wo muph last year, whytew in the past iptui mampuly or ipnimo mampuly a deserted farm stotun un a rider, utatun un a dead person, uugtaun*u*<sub>*pp*</sub> the departed. Sure hapring

AORIST — YUSUPBUL

272. The Aorist is formed with the Aorist Stem of the verb (208–214) and the respective Personal Endings.

273. The Personal Endings of Aorist for Verbs in  $-k_1$ ,  $-mk_1$ , -gpht, -m are:

Sing. 1. -/, 2. -//, 3. Stem Plur. 1. - hue, 2. - he, 3. - hu.

274. The Personal Endings for the Verbs in  $-\mathcal{U}\mathcal{L}_{I}$ ,  $-\mathcal{H}_{I}$ , -"uur, -"up, - 2p1 are:

Paradigms of Aorist in -h 275. Verbs in -E, (4npbE) Aorist Stem: "npbhy-4.008 6.94 I worked. I did work դործեցինը we etc. ոործեցիր դործեցիք thou vou 4110864 he, she, it գործեցին thev 276. Verbs in \_mt. (4nmpmt.) Aorist Stem: 4nunpunkghumpunkyh I shattered, I did shatter humpunkyhue we etc. 4nmpmhghp thou կուորեցիք vou կոտրտեց he, she, it կոտրեցին they 277. Verbs in -yputy (fuoutyputy) Aorist Stem: Juoulignighoulignigh I made (another) speak խօսեցուցինք we etc. Juoulignighp thou խօսեցուցիք you houtgary he, she, it աօսեցուցին they Aorist Stem: /uppugկարդացի I read, I did read կարդացինը we etc. կարդացիր thou կարդացիջ you կարդաց he, she, it կարդացին they

279. Like *[uoulguble]*, the Aorist of Verbs in -guble is formed:

գող–ցրնել	գողցուցի	l made (him) steal
մոռ–ցընել	մոռցուցիր	thou made (him) forget
լմըն–ցընել	լմընցուց	he finished
մանչ–ցընել	Տանչցուցինը	we made (it) known
կորսն–ցընել	կորոնցուցիք	you did los <b>e</b>
խմցընել	խմցուցին	they made (him) drink
կերցընել	կերցուցի	l made (him) eat
մեռցընել	մեռցուցիր	thou killed
Հաւնեցընել	Հաւնեցուց	he made (it) pleasing, agreeable
յոգնեցընել	յոդնեցուցինք	we fatigued
սորվեցընել	սորվեցուցիք	you taught, you did teach

վերցընել	վերցուցին	they lifted
կպցրնել	կպցուցի	I glued
Թոցընել	Թուցուցիր	thou made (it) fly; thou stolest
Հարցընել	Supgney	he asked
ցուցընել	ցուցուցինը	we showed

**280.** Some Verbs drop the first g of  $-g\pi Lg$  throughout the Aorist for the sake of euphony:

վերցուցի or վերուցի, Թռցուցի or Թռուցի,	մեռցուցի or մեռուցի բեռցուցի or բեռուցի from բեռցոնել to load
	<i>nեղըոկել</i> (0 1020

**281.** The first y of -y = y = y does not appear at all when it follows a  $\mathcal{L}$  or y in the stem:

*μωμάμιμε* to turn (for *μωμάμμιε* from Classic *μωμάπεμωιμε*) *μωμάπεμ* (for *μωμάμπεμ*)

*անցընել* to make pass (for *անցցընել* from Classic *անցուցանել*) *անցուցի* l made pass (for *անցցուցի*)

 $\mu \mu \mu \delta \mu \mu b \mu - \mu \mu \mu \delta \mu \mu g h l loaded (for <math>\mu \mu \mu \delta g \mu \mu g h)$ 

Note: The Verbs in  $-g_{L} b L_{L}$  are usually written without the *r* which however is pronounced.

**282.** The Aorist of *dumn\_gulub\_l*, *sumn\_gulub\_l* (See 203) and other Verbs with the Classic Suffix <u>\_n\_gulub\_l</u> is <u>\_n\_gh</u>:

մատուցի	I offered, etc.	մատուցինք	we offered, etc.
մատուցիր		մատուցիք	
մատուց		մատուցին	

Paradigms of Aorist in -mj 283. Verbs in -uli (unlinuli):

Aorist Stem: ml-u-

Aorist:	տեսայ	I saw	տեսանք	we saw
	տեսար	thou	տեսաք	you
	տեսաւ	he, she, it	ហដបយប	they

284. Like mhuuht:

գտ–նել	to	find	Թ.ք–նել	to	spit
պագ-նել	to	kiss	խած-նել		
ជំភា-មែក	to	enter	h2-661	to	descend

**285.** Verbs in  $-h_1$  ( $h_0 u h_1$ ): Aorist Stem: Juoukyhoutymy I spoke houtymu we spoke Aorist: Juoukgun thou Juoukgung you houly he, she, it houly he they 286. Like /uou/11: hunns-h to think um-hi v.i. to burn; but umbi v.t. umbgh 275 μημ-hi v.i. to burn; but μημεί v.t. μημεή 275 lymmy-hy to rage in mun ly-h to lie  $\delta m \eta h - h \eta$  to flourish **287.** Verbs in  $-5h_1$  ( $\beta n + h_1$ ): Aorist Stem: Dn*թուանը* we flew Fran I flew Aorist: Frun thou Janup you Fruit he, she, it *թուան* they 288. In like manner the Verbs given in 197, except: hunshi — hunshyui խրտչիլ — խրտչեցայ Հանգչիլ — Հանգչեցայ 289. Verbs in - 2/1 (pn\_u2/h): Aorist Stem: mnupnLum l grew pnLumbe we grew Aorist: <u> բուսա թ</u> pnlump thou you neume he, she, it pneumb thev 290. In like manner:  $\zeta_{\mu\mu}$  to arrive  $\zeta_{\mu\mu}$  to put on (clothing)  $sha_{h} = sha_{h}$  to die  $sha_{h} = sha_{h}$  to mount a horse, 4 um-uhi to be consumed to ride Aorist Stem: Jnnd'nngui I forgot d'nnguing we forgot Aorist: danguap thou *பீ எடி பய*ூல you dangue he, she, it dangub they

C

.

t

1

292. In like manner:

 $d h \delta (- h m_I) - \eta m_I$ I grew old հիւանդ (-անալ) -ցայ I fell sick hulm(-hung) -gung I heard ճանչ(-նալ) –ցայ I learned դիտ(-նայ) – գայ I knew 4ny (-2m) -gm I stole I feared I was ashamed, etc. (196) ud (-[uu]) -qui

Aorist of Verbs in -nul

293. Of the verbs in -nL only [InqueL, EpqueL, quoulus] form an Aorist in modern Armenian.

294. Infinitive: Angal to leave:

Aorist Stem:	pang- or	Թողուց-	
Aorist:	թողի	Թողուցի	I left
	Paghp	Թողուցիր	thou
		Թողուց	he, she, it
	Թողինք	Թողուցինը	we
	Pnghe	Թողուցիք	you
	Թողին	Թողուցին	they

295. Infinitive: երդնույ or երդուրննալ:

Aorist Stem:	երդ– or	երդուընց-	
Aorist:	երդուայ	երդուրնցայ	I swore
	երդուար	երդուրնցար	thou
	երդուաւ	երդուընցաւ	he, she, it
	երդուանը	երդուընցանք	we
	երդուաք	երդուընցաք	you
	երդուան	երդուընցան	they

~ •

**296.** Infinitive: *quouball* to recreate one's self, to have good Aurist Stem: *quou* [time

Apristi	զբօսայ	I had good time	ղըօսանք	we etc.
	զրօսար	thou	վեօոաճ	you
	<i>чроиш</i> .	he, she, it	ղրօսան	they

**297.** Other Verbs in -mL are used only in the Infinitive, Present and Imperfect, but are replaced in the Aorist by different Verbs:

For Classic Aorist use Modern Aorist զարԹնույ — զարԹեայ to awake արթննալ — արթնցալ զգենուլ --- զգեզալ to dress հագուիլ — հագուեցալ one's self ղենույ — զենի to kill մորթել — մորթեղի, ղոհել --- դոհեղի յաւելույ --- յաւելի to add աւելցրնել — աւելցուղի **469719 --- 469** to shed Թափել - Թափեսի րնթեռնույ — ընթերցայto read կարդայ --- կարդացի յենույ --- լեզայ to lean կո թնիլ --- կո թնեղալ 461n11 --- 461h to wring ոլորել — ոլորեցի գերծնույ — գերծայ to escape աղատիլ — աղատեղալ 14n11 --- 19h to fill լեցնել — լեցուցի hunni -- hugh to close hult - hultgh. апды — апдыдр { այրել — այրեցի { վառել — վառեցի to burn 4hqnij -- 4hqh 286 46ŋáunij — 46ŋáwj to choke *[uhnnnh] — -nnhguŋ* հենույ — հենի to weave sprut - sprut gh 46unij --- 46uh մածնույ — մածեայ to stick to 4ms/1 - 4mm jannı -- janh ¿wpbj --- ywpbyh to set պչնուլ — պչեպլ to look նայիլ — նայեցալ, սեւեռել — սեւեռեցի ջեռնույ — ջեռայ տաքնալ — տաքցալ to warm one's self ցասնույ — ցասեայ to be angry pup fun fun - pup fun-<u>9111</u> to hinder արդիյել — արդիլեցի արգելուլ — արգելի

PERFECT AND PLUPERFECT — BUPUAUSUP DR ADPUAUSUP

**299.** The Perfect and Pluperfect are formed with the Perfect Participle of the Verb  $(-m\delta \text{ or } -h_{I\!\!P})$  and the Auxiliary  $h_{I\!\!P}$  for the Pluperfect Indicative;  $\mu_{III}$  for the Perfect,  $\mu_{III}$  for the Pluperfect Subjunctive. The Perfect Participle does not change throughout the Conjugation.

**300.** The ending  $-m\delta$  (or  $-k_P$ ) is attached to the Aorist Stem of the Verbs in  $-m_L$ ,  $-k_L$ , -

301. Paradigms of Perfect and Pluperfect

				_			
	Indicati	ve		Su	ıbjunc	tive	
Infinitive	Perfect Part.	Per	f.	Plup.	Perf.	Plup.	
q "rot	ղ <i>ործ-ած(ե</i> ր)	<b>L</b> .	I have	<i>t∱</i> had	Climat	curyt	worked
hout	luou-wd	E u	thou	<i>\$[•</i> [•	<u>רווייי</u>	cı <b></b>	spoken
<i>կոտըտել</i>	կոտըա-ած	ţ	he	\$r	<i>СЦ<sup>ш</sup>Ј</i>	Ľ11 <b></b> ť	shattered
4 <b>~~</b> ~~~~	կարդաց-ած	ենք	we	<i>էի</i> ն <sub>Ք</sub>	<u>"""</u> "	<i>ըլլայի</i> ն <sub>ք</sub>	read
a na tim	մուց_ած	5e	you	5ŀ₽	ĽШ#₽	<u>curyt</u> e	forgotten
- £ ~ b L j	տես–ած	եъ	they	<u> </u>	CIL <sup>mb</sup>	<u>ՄILային</u>	seen
Par w 2 /2	լուս–ած	F 2	I	ちゃ	1'11 <b>''' d</b>	<i>ตเนพงโ</i> ร	grown
Pritt	pa-mo	L u	thou	ちじじ	l'LL <sup>WU</sup>	<i>בונייויוי</i> י	flown
Pageril	Թոուց-ած	ţ	he	\$Ľ	<u>ĽШ</u> IJ	ĽLL₩Ľ	made fly
P~1~+L	pag-ud or	ենչք	we	<i>է ի</i> նչք	<i>EUmp</i> &	<u>ը Մունիս</u> են	left
	թողուց-ած						
	Հատու–ցած	\$₽	you	\$ the	ĽIL <b>™</b> ₽	בעייניר פ	restored
·~~g/2LL	Հատցուց_ած	<u>եъ</u>	they	<i>է [•</i> ն	<i>ԸԼԼան</i>	<i>ԸԼԼային</i>	exhausted

**302.** The Second Person Plural of the Imperative Mood (positive command) is formed with the Aorist Stem plus the Ending  $-\xi_{\mathcal{R}}$ .

303. The Second Person Singular of the Imperative is formed:

a) By adding  $-\xi'$  to the Present Stem of the Verbs in  $-E_{L}$ ,  $-\mu_{L}$ ,  $-\mu_{L}$ .

b) By adding -m' to the Present Stem of the Verbs in  $-m_1$ .

c) By adding -h'p' to the Aorist Stem of the Verbs in  $-hm_L$ ,  $-hh_L$ ,  $-hp_L$ ,  $-\xi h_L$ .

d) By changing the final g into p of the Aorist Stem of the Verbs in  $-gpbl_{I}(gn'lg) = gnl_{I}$ .

Paradigms of Imperative

#### 304.

Infinitive	Present Sten	n Aorist Stem	Sing. Plur.	
գործել	դործ-		ղործէ՛	
		<i>պո</i> րծեց–	<i>գործեցէ</i> ՛ ք	Work!
honhr	luou-	1.1	[uou5]	Speak!
կոտրտել	hammann-	wout g-	աօսեցէ՛ջ կոտրտէ՛	Speak :
1	<i></i>	կոտրտեց_	կուտրտեցէ՛ք	Shatter!
կարդալ	կարդ-	• • •	կարդա՛	
		կարդաստ	կարդացէ՛ ջ	Read!
մոռնալ	<u> </u>	dnng-	dnngh'p, dnngt'e	Forget!
մտնել		1 m-	մտի՛ր, մտէ՛ք	Enter!
բուսնիլ		µnLu-	բուսի'ը, բուսէ'ք	Grow!
Թոչիլ		pn-	Prh'n, Prt'e	Fly!
բարձրա-		բարձրա-	բարձրացո'ւթ,	Lift up!
ցընել		gnLg—	բարձրացէ՛ ք	

305. Verbs in \_\_\_\_\_.

Imperative

Թողուլ	<i>թո</i> ՛ղ	சिनन्द'∉ or சिनन्न∟gf'æ
ղ <u>ե</u> տղուլ՝		quout'e
երդնուլ	երդնուի՛ր	երդուեցէ՛ք, երդուընցէ՛ք

**306.** Classic Verbs like  $\mathfrak{summiguit}_{l}$  to offer,  $\mathfrak{summiguit}_{l}$  to reward, to restitute, to remunerate, make the Imperative Singular  $\mathfrak{summ'}$ ,  $\mathfrak{summ'}$  and the Plural  $\mathfrak{summigf'}_{\ell}$ ,  $\mathfrak{summiggf'}_{\ell}$ ,  $\mathfrak{summiggf'}_{\ell}$ . The Plural of these Imperatives is used in Modern Armenian, but not the Singular; Synonyms are used instead:

Ներկայացո'ւր present, տո'ւր give, Նուիրէ' give, for մատո'. Հատուցում ըրէ' for Հատո'.

Incorrect and to be rejected are forms like *dumn\_yn\_p*,

**307.** For First and Third Persons, Singular and Plural, the Subjunctive is used as an indirect Imperative or Hortative, eventually preceded by  $\beta n\eta$ , the Second Person Singular Imperative of  $\beta n\eta n\mu_{I}$ :

( <b>//</b> //////////////////////////////////	դործեն	let them work!
		let us speak!
	สำหาร์บบร์บ	

PASSIVE VERBS — ԿՐԱՒՈՐԱԿԱՆ ԲԱՑ

**308.** The Passive Voice of Verbs is formed with the distinctive Vowel  $n_{\rm L}$  inserted between the Stem and the Infinitive Ending.

**309.** The Verbs in  $-\underline{L}_{\ell}$ ,  $-\underline{L}_{\ell}_{\ell}$  use the Present Stem, the Verbs in  $-\underline{\mu}_{\ell}$  use the Aorist Stem to form the Passive Voice.

**310.** The Infinitive Ending of the Passive Voice is uniform for all Conjugations:  $-p_1$ .

**311.** All the Verbs in Passive follow the pattern of the Second Conjugation plus the inserted  $-m_{-}$ . This vowel appears in all Persons, Numbers, Tenses and Moods.

312. Only the Active Verbs have a Passive Voice. Transitive Verbs in  $-g_{\mu}b_{\mu}$  have the Passive Voice in  $-g_{\mu}b_{\mu}$ .

**313.** In the following Paradigms the Subjunctive is not given. It is identical with the Indicative minus the particle  $\mu_{L}(\mu', \mu_{nL})$ . Paradigms of Passive Voice Present Indicative of Passive

<b>314.</b> a) Prese	nt Stems: חַקּוּ ש			
կը սիրուիմ	I am loved, etc.	կը սիրուինք	we etc.	
կը սիրուիս	thou	կը սիրուիք	you	
կը սիրուի	he, she, it	կը սիրուին	they	
b) <i>տեսն</i>				
կը տեսնուիմ	I am seen, etc.	կը տեսնուինք	we etc.	
կը տեսնուիս	thou	կը տեսնուիջ	you	
կը տեսնուի	he, she, it	կը տեսնուին	they	
с) <i>бы</i> бу-				
կը մեծցուիմ	l am brought up	կը մեծցուինք	we etc.	
կը մեծցուիս	thou	կը մեծցուիք	you	
կը մեծցուի	he, she, it	կը մեծցուին	they	
315. Aorist Stem: կարդաց-				
կը կարդացուիմ	I am read, 4p	կարդացուինը	we etc.	
կը կարդացուիս	thou 4p	կարդացուիք	you	
կը կարդացուի	he, she, it $4n$	կարդացուին	they	

# Imperfect Indicative of Passive

316. With Present Stems:

a) կը սիրուէի	I was being loved	կը սիրուէինջ	we etc.
կը սիրուէիր	thou	կը սիրուէիջ	you
կը սիրուէր	he, she, it	կը սիրուէին	they
b) կը տեսնուէի	l was being seen	կը տեղնուէինք	we etc.
կը տեսնուէիր	thou	կը տեսնուէիջ	you
կը տեսնուէր	he, she, it	կը տեսնուէին	they
c) կը մեծցուէի կը մեծցուէիր կը մեծցուէր 317 With Aori	I was being thou [brought up he, she, it st Stems:	կը մեծցուէինը կը մեծցուէիք կը մեծցուէին	we etc. you they

#### 317. With Aorist Stems:

կը կարդացուէի	l was being	կը կարդացուէին we etc.
կը կարդացուէիր	thou [read	<i>կը կարդացուէի</i> ք you
կը կարդացուէր	he, she, it	<i>կը կարդացուէի</i> ն they

Aorist of Passive

318. Verbs in -n-h1, -un-h1, -gn-h1 (of Trans. -gnub1): a) uhnnetaun I was loved սիրուեղանը we etc. սիրուեզար thou սիրուեղաթ vou սիրուեղաւ he, she, it սիրուեղան thev b) տեսնուեցայ I was seen intutinetry will be we etc. տեսնուեզար thou տեսնուեցաթ vou տեսնուեզաւ he, she, it տեսնուեղան thev c) մեծցուեցալ I was brought up ивбульвушир we etc. մեծպուեպար thou մեծսուեցաթ vou մեծցուեցաւ he, she, it մեծուեցան they 319. Verbs in -grafic (of Trans. -wc): կարդացուեցայ I was read կարդացուեցանը we etc. 4mpgmgmlbgmp thou կարդացուեցաջ you կարդացուեցաւ he, she, it կարդացուեցան thev 320. Perfect and Pluperfect of Passive Perfect Passive Pluperfect Passive a) -n\_h սիրուած FI I have been - 54 I had been loved loved b) -unchi տեսնուած 6.0 thou hast - 5/1 thou hast been seen been seen  $C^{(1)} - gnLh_{I} (-gnLh_{I})$ մեծցուած L'up we have been  $-\xi/b_{\mathcal{P}}$  we had been brought up brought up 321. -gn\_h/ (-m/): կարդացուած են they have - 5 hu they had been read been read 322. Imperative and Prohibitive of Passive 3 -nchi: uhpnik be thou loved սիրուեցէք be ye loved մի՛ սիրուիր don't (thou) be loved Sh' uppnipp don't (ye) be loved

b) <i>_նուիլ</i> ։	տեսնուէ	be thou seen
	տեսնուեցէք	be ye seen
	մի՛ տեսնուիր	don't (thou) be seen
	մի՛ տեսնուիք	don't (ye) be seen
c) –ցուիլ։	մեծցուէ	be thou brought up
	մեծցուեցէք	be ye brought up
	մի՛ մեծցուիր	don't (thou) be brought up
	մի՛ մեծցուիք	don't (ye) be brought up

323. -yn\_h( (-m):

կարդացուէ	be thou read
կարդացուեցէջ	be ye read
	don't (thou) be read
մի՛ կարդացուիք	

### Infinitive of Passive

324. Present:

a) սիրուիլ	to be loved
տեսնուիլ	to be seen
մեծցուիլ	to be brought up

b) *կարդացուիլ* to be read

325. Perfect:

a) սիրուած րլլալ	to have been loved
տեսնուած ըլլալ	to have been seen
մեծցուած ըլլալ	to have been brought up

b) *կшрղшупсшо р*<sub>1</sub>*ш*<sub>1</sub> to have been read

## Participles of Passive

326. Present Participle:

a) սիրուող	being loved
տեսնուող	being seen
մեծցուող	being brought up

b) huppugning being read

327. Perfect Participle:

a)	սիրուած	having been loved
	տեսնուած	having been seen
	մեծցուած	having been brought up
b)	կարդացուած	having been read

Future Participle (Gerundive) of Passive

a)		ուելու ուելիջ	about to be loved something to be loved
		նուելու նուելի <u>ք</u>	about to be seen something to be seen
		ցուելու ցուելիք	about to be brought up something to be brought up
b) <i>—gni</i>	<i>[rL</i> <sup>;</sup>	կարդացուն կարդացուն	terme about to be read المالية something to be read

Passive of Verbs in -nul

**329.** The Transitive Verbs in  $-mL_{l}$  do not insert a second mL; they keep their mL and insert an h between it and the ending L. Anything else is regular.

Pres.	կը Թողուիմ	I am left
Imp.	4p Bugnith	I was being left
Aor.	Թողուեցայ	I was left
Perf.	Թողուած եմ	l have been left
Plup.	Թողուած էի	I had been left
Imper.	Թողուէ — Թողուեցէք	be left!
Prohib.	մի՛ Թողուիր մի՛ Թողուիջ	do not be left
Inf.	Թողուիլ — Թողուած րյլայ	to be, to have been left
Part.	Թողուող — Թողուած	being, having been left
	Թողուելու — Թողուելիք	about to be left

Passive of Verbs in -h1

**330.** The Verbs in  $-\mu_l$  are for the most part Intransitive (see 218). The Transitives in  $-\mu_l$  have regular Passives in  $-\mu_l\mu_l$ :

 $\mu_{0} \mu_{l} - \mu_{0} \mu_{l}$  to speak, to be spoken. The Intransitives in  $-\mu_{l}$ ,  $-\mu_{l}$ ,  $-\xi \mu_{l}$  form the Passive from their Transitives in  $-g\mu_{l}\mu_{l}$ ,  $-g\mu_{l}\mu_{l}$ ;

Հասնիլ	to arrive
— Հասցընել	to send, to bring
— Հասցուիլ	to be sent, brought
Հազնիլ	to dress one'self
Հազցընել	to dress
— Հազցուիլ	to be dressed
փախչիլ	to flee
— փախցընել	to put to flight
— փախցուիլ	to be put to flight

REFLEXIVE VERBS — ԱՆԴՐԱԴԱՐՁ ԲԱՑԵՐ

331. Transitive Verbs which have a Reflexive Pronoun as Direct or Indirect Object are called *munpunpul* Reflexive.

**332.** The Reflexive Pronouns as Direct Object of Transitive Verbs are (see 167):

	Sing.	Plur.
lst	ինը գինքս	myself <i>វាង៤គ្ន qរាំងច្ន</i> ourselves
2nd	ինը զինքո	thyself <i>qnLpq&amp;Lq</i> yourselves
3rd	ինք զինքը	him-, herself hubbe qhubbe themselves

**333.** The Reflexive Pronouns as Indirect Object of Transitive Verbs are:

	Sing.		Plur.	
1st	ես ինծի,	<i>ինը իրենս</i> to myself	մենը մեզի	to ourselves
2nd	ղու(ն) ջեզի,	<b>ក្រំរុទ្ធ ក្រុក ហ្មែ.</b> to thyself	ղուք ձեղի	to yourselves
3rd	ինք իրեն	•	իրենք իրենց	to themselves

**334.** The Transitive Verbs with Reflexive Pronouns are conjugated like any Transitive Verb.

335. Some Verbs, Passive in form, are Reflexive in meaning:  $\mu_{\mu}\rho + n_{\mu}\rho_{l}$  (or  $\mu_{\mu}\rho + \rho_{l}$ ) to exercise one's self in -; to get  $5\mu_{\mu}n_{\mu}\rho_{l}$  to undress one's self [used to  $\mu_{\mu}n_{\mu}\rho_{l}\rho_{l}$  to comb one's hair

**336.** The Verbs Passive in form and Reflexive in meaning are conjugated like Passive Verbs without Reflexive Pronouns.

### RECIPROCAL VERBS — ФЛЬИЧИГА РИЗВГ

337. Transitive Verbs with the Pronouns *sflpqsfl*, *qppmp* one another, as Direct Object, or with the Pronouns *sflpsflpt*, *ppmpnL* to, for one another, as Indirect Object, are called Reciprocal Verbs — *dpnfumpmp& pmj*.

մէկըզմէկ կը վիրաւորեն	they hurt one another
զիրար կ՚ամբաստանեն	they accuse one another
մէկը մէկու Թչնամի են	they are enemies to each other
իրարու կը նախանձին	they envy each other

338. They are conjugated like any other Transitive Verb.

339. Some Verbs Passive in form are reciprocal in meaning:

հաչտուիլ	to	be reconciled to each other
<i>համ բուրուիլ</i>	to	kiss one another
ողջագուրուիլ	to	embrace one another

**340.** These Verbs (**339**) are conjugated like the Passive Verbs. They have no Pronouns as Direct or Indirect Object.

#### NEGATIVE FORM OF VERBS — ԺԽՏԱԿԱՆ ՁԵՒ

341. The Negative Particle for Verbs in Indicative and Subjunctive is  $\xi$ -. The Particle  $d' \mu'$  is used for the Negative of the Imperative Mood (Prohibitive); see 239-243.

Negative of Subjunctive, Infinitive, Participles.

342. The Particle  $\xi$  is prefixed to the Verb in Subjunctive, infinitive and Participles.

Present Subjunctive:	ระเทโลนในโลน์ etc.	etc.
Imperfect Subjunctive:	intutif h etc.	spijujh etc.
Infinitive :	չտեսնել	EULIII L
Present Participle:	չտեսնող	נפווחת (גבתחת)
Perfect Participle:	չաեսած	չեղած
Future Participle:	Հաեսնելու	

### Negative of Future and Conditional

**343.** The same rule applies to First Future and Conditional which are formed with the Particle  $u_{f}h_{m}h_{f}$  and the Subjunctive of the Verb. The Negative Particle  $\xi$  is prefixed to the Verb, not to  $u_{f}h_{m}h$ :

First Future: *whinh sinkulul* etc. *whinh spiluul* etc. First Conditional: *whinh sinkulul* etc. *whinh spiluul* etc.

Negative of Aorist:

344. The Negative of the Aorist is formed with the Particle prefixed to the Verb: surface, strong (187).

Negative of Second Future and Conditional

**345.** The Particle  $\xi$  is prefixed neither to the Perfect Participle of the Verb nor to the Particle  $\mu_{l}$ , but to the Auxiliary  $\mu_{l}$ .

Second Future:

மக்யால் யுற்றை தற்றும் etc. காயல் யுற்றை தற்றும் etc. Second Conditional:

տեսած պիտի չըլլայի etc. եղած պիտի չըլլայի etc.

Negative of Present and Imperfect Indicative

**346.** The Negative of Present and Imperfect Indicative is formed with the Negative of the Auxilary ( $\xi L d - \xi f_{\mu}$  see 185) and the Infinitive of the Verb of which, however, the Ending -Lis changed into  $-\mu$ . Moreover, in the Negative Imperfect of Verbs in  $-h_{1}$ ,  $-m_{\mu}h_{1}$  the h before L is changed into L:

Present	Imperfect
<i>չեմ տես</i> ներ	չէի տեսներ
stal poupp	¿th houbp
<i>չեմ կարդա</i> ր	<i>չէի կարդա</i> ր
չ <i>եմ սիրու</i> իր	<i>չէը կարդացու</i> Եր

### չh for չէ

**346 a.** The Third Person of the Negative Auxiliary in the Present Indicative is  $\underline{\ell}h$  (not  $\underline{\ell}\xi$ ), which is elided before Verbs beginning with a vowel:

źŀ	տեսն	եր	źŀ	խօսիր
¿'n	ւղեր	for	2ŀ	ուղեր

The Particle  $4\mu$  omitted.

347. The Particle  $\underline{l}_{\underline{l}'}$  is omitted in the Negative form of Verbs Those few Verbs which are inflected without the Particle  $\underline{l}_{\underline{l}'}$  (*E.I.*,  $\underline{n}$ /*pmEd*,  $\underline{l}_{\underline{l}'}$ *ud*,  $\underline{n}_{\underline{l}'}$ *box*) form their Negative with the prefixed  $\therefore$  (See 181, 372, 392, 396).

> չեմ — չէի չգիտեմ — չգիտէի չկամ — չկայի չունիմ — չունէի

Note: The Negative of *qfmtd* may also be according to 346; 24d, 24f qfmtr. About 4rbml see 394.

Negative of Perfect and Pluperfect Indicative

**348.** The Negative of Perfect and Pluperfect Indicative is formed with the Negative Auxiliary ( $\mathcal{L}\mathcal{L}\mathcal{L}$  for the Perfect,  $\mathcal{L}\mathcal{L}\mathcal{L}$  for the Pluperfect) and the Perfect Participle of the Verb.

In the Third Person Perfect, the Auxiliary is  $\xi\xi$ , not  $\xi\mu$ .

Paradigms of Negative Conjugation 349. a) Present Indicative:

ξεν ηπρδερ I do not work, I am not working ξεν ημητωρ thou doest not read, art not reading μ μου μρ he, she, it does not speak, is not speaking ζ'μμαρ he, she, it does not hate خِلَّتُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ اللَّ المَا اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ ع

b) Imperfect Indicative

չէի տեսներ	I was not seeing
չէիր Թռչեր	thou wast not flying
չէր խաղար	he, she, it was not playing
չէր ատեր	
չէինը սանտրուեր	we were not combing ourselves
չէիք հաչտուեր	you were not being reconciled
չէին վարժուեր	they were not being accustomed

### 350. Aorist:

չերգեցի	I did not sing
sjukghp	thou didst not hear
spout yme	he, she, it did not speak
វក្រៃ៤១គ្រំបត្	we did not keep silence
չիսմեցիք	you did not drink
չՀասան	they did not arrive

**351.** a) Perfect Indicative:

չեմ սիրած	I have not loved
չես սիրուած	thou hast not been loved
չէ մոռցած	he, she, it has not forgotten
չենը մատնած	we have not betrayed
չէր սպանած	you have not killed
	they have not been killed

b) Pluperfect:

չէի փախած	I had not fled
չէիր իջած	thou hadst not descended
չէր սկսած	he, she, it had not begun
չէինը աւարտած	we had not finished
չէիք հաղուած	you had not been dressed
չէին ծլած	they had not sprouted

352. a) First Future:

պիտի չմոռնամ	I shall not forget
պիտի չմոռցընես	thou wilt not make (him) forget
պիտի չմուցուի	he will not be forgotten
պիտի չմանչնանը	we shall not recognize
պիտի չհասկնաք	you will not understand
պիտի չիմանան	they will not hear (understand)

b) Second Future:

սիրած պիտի չըլլամ ատած պիտի չըլլաս	I shall not have loved
յողնած պիտի չրյյալ	thou wilt not have hated he, she, it will not have been tired
իսոսված պիտի չըլլանը	we shall not have troubled
յուղուած պիտի չըլլան Հանգչած պիտի չըլլան	you will not have been upset they will not have rested

353. Subjunctive Present:

չղործեմ	<i>չսի</i> րեն <sub>Ք</sub>	
Shoonfin	தராடாய	
El n f	չհաւատան	

354. Subjunctive Imperfect:

24npbbh	<u> չ</u> ատէինք
Shont hu	չխաղայիք
Elu El	<u>չամէին</u>

355. a) First Conditional:

պիտի չընկի	I should not do
պիտի չամըչնայիր	thou wouldst not be ashamed
պիտի չղեղներ	he would not pale
պիտի չկեղծէինը	we should not feign
պիտի չմարէիք՝	you would not faint
պիտի չսթեափերն	they would not wake up

b) Second Conditional:

րսած պիտի չըլլայի ծախսած պիտի չըլլայիը զնած պիտի չըլլար

I should not have said thou wouldst not have spent he, she, it would not have bought

	rt sellmite	you would	not have sold not have smoked I not have left
¿luou li L	not to work	աչտուիլ ռչիլ	to not be reconciled to not fly
չտեսնող չլ <sup>սող</sup>	ent Participle: not seeing عن not hearing عن not speaking		
չ៣៩០៣៩ չըործած չխօսած d) Futu չտեսնելու չկարդալու չխօսելու	not having worked	د <b>برسرس</b> to see to read to speak	not having been loved wð not having read

#### 

**357.** A Periphrastic form is a "round about way of speaking". In the widest sense, all Verb-phrases consisting of Participles and of *Ld*, <u>*r*[[</u>*uud*] are Periphrastic forms. But the Present Participle  $(-n\eta)$  and the Future Participle  $(-\mu rL)$  are especially used in a Periphrastic way.

**358.** The Periphrastic Conjugation consisting of the unchanged Present Participles of any Verb and of *Ed*, *Clumb*, denotes a progressive action:

 $q_n p \delta nq$ , [uounq], u h p n l nq, h l n l nq  $b d = \xi h - b q u g - b q u \delta b d - b q u \delta \xi h - u h m h p l u u d - (p l u d - p l - l u g h) - b q h' p - l am, was, became, have been, had been, shall be, be! working, speaking, being loved, fighting.$ 

**359.** The Periphrastic Conjugation consisting of the Future Participle and of *Lif*, <u>*pllud*</u> denotes, 1) a future or intended action, 2) an obligation, a necessity.

**360.** The Auxiliaries *Ld*, <u>*plund*</u> are inflected regularly throughout the Indicative and Subjunctive, the preceding Participle remaining unchanged. For the Periphrastic Future and Conditional the Auxiliary Verb is *h'clumd*, *h'clumf*, not *mfmf*, *plumd*, *mfmf*, *plumf*:

Indicative:

Pres.	գործելու եմ	I must work
Imperf.	gggujac Shp	thou ought to have repented
Aorist	մեռնելու եղանը	we were about to die
Perf.	սիրուելու եղած էք	you had to be loved
Pluperf.	պատժուելու եղած էին	they had had to be punished
Future	տեսնելու կ'րլլամ	I shall be seeing
Condit.	տեսնելու կ՝ըլլայի	I should be seeing

Subjunctive:

Pres.	գալու ըլլամ
lmperf.	տայու ըլլայիր
Perf.	դնելու եղած ըլլայ
Pluperf.	օդնելու եղած ըլլայինը

Infinitive: [be loved Pres. <u>mulne</u>, <u>uhpmehlne</u> <u>plune</u> to be about to give, -to Perf. <u>uhmuhlne</u> <u>bquub</u> <u>plune</u> to have been about to die.

IMPERSONAL VERBS — ԴԻՄԱԶՈՒՐԿ ԲԱՑԵՐ

**361.** Some Verbs are used only in the Third Person Singular. They are called Impersonal Verbs, as they have no Personal Subject. The Pronoun "it" used in English with Impersonal Verbs has no equivalent in Armenian.

**362.** There are very few strictly Impersonal Verbs in Armenian. They are mostly Personal Verbs used impersonally. They may be classified as follows:

**363.** Verbs expressing the operations of nature and the time of day:

կը մութնայ or կը մթնէ	it grows late, dark
կը լուսնար	it was getting light
անձրեւեց	it rained
պիտի ձիւնէ	it will snow
կը փայլատակէ	it lightens
կ՝որոտայ	it thunders
անձրեւ կու գայ, կը տես	<i>Luy</i> it rains; literally: rain is coming, pouring
ծիւն կու դայ, կ'իջնէ	it snows; literally: snow is coming, falling
կարկուտ կու դայ, կը տես	<i>uy</i> it hails; literally: hail is coming, pouring down
օղը տաք է	it is warm
օղը գեղեցիկ է	it is nice (weather)
օդը պաղ է	it is cold

**364.** When the Subject is indefinite, the Third Person Singular of Passive Voice or the Third Person Plural of Transitive or Intransitive Verbs is used:

կ'пипьh it is said — h'пиliu they say		
կը պատմուի it is told – կր պատմեն they tell		
կը խօսուի	it is rumored	
կը կարծուի	it is thought - 4p 4mp 8 b they think	
կու դան կ՝երթան	they come and go	
կը կռուին	there is figthing	

Note: The impersonal use of the Passive proceeds from its Reflexive (or Middle) meaning, the action being regarded as accomplishing itself. Popular speech forms in this way the Impersonals of Intransitive Verbs:  $\frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{2}$ 

**365.** Some Impersonals are formed with the Third Person Singular of the Auxiliary Verb *Ed* (*f*, *fp*, *knml*, *mfmf*, *p11mg*, *p11mg*, *p11mp*) preceded by an Adjective or Substantive:

швор Е	it's a shame	<i>վայել</i> է it's fit
մեղք է	it's a pity	infunu fit's too bad

րաւ է	it's enough	հերիք է	it's enough
•	it must be		it's an honor
	it's possible	պէտը է	it ought to be

Note: The Impersonal  $w_{f}w_{\ell}$  is can be expressed personally:  $w_{f}w_{\ell}$  is  $d_{\ell}$ ,  $w_{f}w_{\ell}$  is  $d_{\ell}$ ,  $w_{f}w_{\ell}$  is  $\ell$  in the impersonal forms are followed either by  $n_{\ell}$  + Subjunctive or Infinitive:  $w_{f}w_{\ell}$  is  $d_{\ell}w_{\ell}$  for  $w_{f}w_{\ell}$  is  $d_{\ell}w_{\ell}$  if  $d_{\ell}w_{\ell}$  is necessary to go.

366. Strictly Impersonal are:

h'on that's sufficient, enough hun there is

Note: The ancient Impersonal *where* one must, is used as a Particle to form the Future and the Conditional (229, 234).

### IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS ԱՆԿԱՆՈՆ ԵՒ ՊԱԿԱՍԱՒՈՐ ԲԱՑԵՐ

**367.** Irregular are the Verbs which do not follow the general rule of forming the Aorist Stem, the Participles and the Passive Voice. Defective verbs lack some Tenses, Moods or Participles; they are supplied by other Verbs. F. i. *Luf* has neither Infinitive nor Aorist Stem; <u> $\mu_{II}$ </u> has no Aorist Stem; <u> $\mu_{II}$ </u> is used only in the Aorist Stem (see 185–188).

List of Irregular and Defective Verbs

368. Infinitive: unlift or unline, to take; Aorist Stem: un

Note: In Classic Armenian  $wn^{k}b_{l}$  means "to make, to do";  $wn^{k}n_{l}$  means "to take". In Modern Armenian  $wn^{k}b_{l}$  is weakened to  $p^{k}b_{l}$  (386), and  $wn^{k}b_{l}$  is used instead of  $wn^{k}n_{l}$  to take. In Present and Imperfect both  $wn^{k}b_{l}$  and  $wn^{k}n_{l}$  may be used in the sense of Classic  $wn^{k}n_{l}$  to take.

Ind. Pres.	կ'առնեմ or կ'առնում l am taking
Negative	չեմ առներ or առնուր I do not take
Ind. Imperf.	h'untiff or h'untinch I was taking
Negative	Et multip or multinen I was not taking
Aorist	առի, առիր, առաւ, առինք, առիք, առին I took
lmper.	$\mu'n$ , $\mu n \xi' p$ take (thou), take (ye) [etc.
Prohib.	մի' առներ (or առնուր) do not take (Sing.)
	մի' առնէջ (or առնուջ) do not take (Plur.)
Perf. Part.	unuð, unkp taken

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2011

Fut. Part. <u>unfulne</u> or <u>unful</u>ne about to take Passive <u>unfunch</u> to be taken

369. Infinitive: µuu to open; Aorist Stem: µug-

Aorist	եածի՝ եածիև՝ եածաւ՝ եածիրճ՝ եւ	սցիք, բացին
Imper.	யாத, மாவிர் @ Open!	[l opened, etc.
	rugnq opening	
Perf. Part.	μωηωδ, μωηեη opened	
Passive	rugnehl to be opened	

Aoristμեρh, μեρhp, μեρμω, μեρhu, μեρhu, μեρhu, μερhuImper.μμ'ρ, μερξ' βring!Imper.μμ'ρ, μερξ' βring!Perf. Part.μερωδ, μερμρPassiveμεριιζιto be brought

371. Infinitive: qui to come; Aorist Stem: 44-

Note: In Indic. Present and Imperfect, the Particle is  $4\pi c$  instead of 4c (See 220).

Present	ипь ңши, ипь ңши, ипь ңшу I am coming, etc.
	կու գանը, կու գաը, կու գան
Imperf.	цп. q.шур, цп. q.шурр, цп. q.шр I was coming, etc.
	կու դայինը, կու դայիը, կու դային
Aorist	եկայ, եկար, եկաւ, եկանք, եկաջ, եկան came
Imper.	$h \mu r' \mu r, h \mu f' \rho$ Come! [etc.]
Prohib.	பீ h' சுயர, பீ h' சுயழ do not come!
Pres. Part.	<i>Lynn</i> coming
Perf. Part.	եկած, եկեր come
Fut. Part.	<i>цшигь</i> , <i>цшир</i> about to come

**372.** 9-*funcal*, I know, lacks the Infinitive and all the other forms except indicative Present and Imperfect. The inflection is without the Particle  $4_{III}$  (See 216 Note).

Present קווחבט, קווחב, קווחב, קווחבט, קוו

Imperf. *ahmsh*, *ahmsh*, *ahms*, *ahmsh*, *ahms* 

The lacking forms are supplied by  $\eta_{l}$  in  $\delta_{l}$  - a Secondary Formation from the Stem  $\eta_{l}$  -  $\eta_{l}$  -  $\eta_{l}$  - :

Future	պիտի գիտնամ, — գիտնաս, — գիտնայ l shall [know
_	պիտի գիտնանը, — գիտնաը, — գիտնան
Condit.	պիտի գիտնայի, գիտնայիր, գիտնար I should
	դիտնայինը, դիտնայիը, դիտնային [know
Subj. Pres.	դիտնամ ․․․
Imperf.	գիտնայի
Imper.	<i>ų μmg μ' μ, ų μmg ξ' μ</i> Know!
Prohib.	մի՛ գիտնար, մի՛ գիտնաջ Do not know!
Infinitive	upiniuu to know
Pres. Part.	afingna knowing
Perf. Part.	դիտցած, դիտցեր known
Fut. Part.	about to know
Passive	<i>upungnehi</i> to be known

373. Infinitive:  $\eta_{\mu\nu} h_{\mu\nu} h_{\mu\nu}$  (intrans.) to return, to become; Aorist Stem:  $\eta_{\mu\nu} h_{\mu} \delta_{-}$ 

Aorist	ղարձայ, ղարձար, դարձաւ l returned
	ղարձանը, դարձաը, դարձան
Imper.	դարձի'ը, դարձէ'ը Return!
Perf. Part.	nundan returning
	ரயாகியிக், ரயாகிசா returned

In like manner the compound *dhpunpunbung* to return.

Note: Transitive and regular is  $q = p^{\delta} p^{\delta L} (q b p = q p^{\delta} p^{\delta L})$  with the infix  $-g p^{\delta}$ , of which the original g (Classic  $q = p^{\delta n L} g = b b L$ ) has been assimilated to d (281).

374. Infinitive: *quel* to put, to set, to lay; Aorist Stem: *qp*-

Aorist	դրի, դրիր, դրաւ. դրինը, դրիք, դրին I put
Imper.	ημ'r, ηrt'e Put!
	դրած, դրեր put
Passive	npnchl to be set, put, laid

**375.** Infinitive:  $\mathbf{E}_{\underline{l}\underline{l}}\mathbf{E}_{\underline{l}}$  to go out, to get off, to rise; (contracted from Classic  $\mathbf{E}_{\underline{l}\underline{u}\underline{u}\underline{b}\underline{E}_{\underline{l}}}$  to  $\mathbf{E}_{\underline{l}\underline{b}\underline{b}\underline{E}_{\underline{l}}}$  and assimilated  $\underline{L}$  to  $\underline{L}$ ) Aorist Stem:  $\mathbf{E}_{\underline{l}\underline{b}\underline{b}\underline{b}\underline{l}}$ 

Aorist 6 Lun, 6 Lun, 6 Lune, 6

Imper.  $h'_{L}$ ,  $h_{L}f'_{P}$  Rise! Perf. Part.  $h_{I}m\delta$ ,  $h_{I}h_{P}$  risen

376. hnun see 183, 185, 187, 367.

377. *L*J see 183, 185, 187, 367.

378. Epplanel to swear, see 221, 227, 233, 242, 247, 256, 263, 268, 295, 298, 305.

379. Epfeul to go, has the Indicative Present (l'Epfeud, ¿Ed Epfeup); Imperfect (l'Epfeugh, ¿Eh Epfeup); Subjunctive Present (Epfeud, ¿Epfeud); Imperfect (Epfeugh, ¿Epfeugh); First Future (uphuh Epfeud) and Conditional (uphuh Epfeugh); Fut. Part. Epfeugne

Other forms are lacking and are supplied by q  $lum_L$ Aorist Stem: q lum g-

Aorist դնացի, դնացիր, դնաց. դնացինը, դնացիջ դնացին l went

Imper. a hun', a hung t' g Go!

Pres. Part. alunging going

Perf. Part. quuguo, quughp gone

Note: In all the forms with the stem  $q^{2\nu}$  the  $\nu$  may be suppressed, except in Second Pers. Sing. Imp.:  $q^{\mu\nu}g^{\mu} - q^{\mu\nu}g^{\mu}q - q^{\mu\nu}g^{\mu}\phi - q^{\mu\mu}g^{\mu}\phi - q^$ 

380. *qpoubnel* see 221, 227, 233, 237, 242, 247, 256, 263, 268, 293, 296, 305.

381. Infinitive: quput\_t to strike; (contracted from Classic quputute\_t) Aorist Stem: quput\_

Aorist	ղարկի, ղարկիր, ղարկաւ. ղարկին	e, quette,
Imper.	<i>ημρμή</i> i struck <i>ημ'ρμ, ημρμμ'</i> f Strike!	
Pres. Part.	ղարնող striking	

Perf. Part. gupupus, gupupup struck

Passive quiptinely to be struck

382. pjjul see 186.

**383.** <u>p</u>*i***b**<sub>*L*</sub> to make, to do; (contracted and weakened from Classic <u>unii</u><u>b</u><sub>*L*</sub>) — <u>up</u><u>up</u><u>-</u><u>ip</u><u>b</u><u>b</u><sub>*L*</sub>, <u>uii</u><u>b</u><sub>*L*</sub>) — <u>up</u><u>-</u><u>up</u><u>-</u><u>ip</u><u>b</u><u>b</u><u>b</u><u>b</u> ned: Aorist Stem: <u>pp</u><u>-</u>

Aoristμph, μphp, μpuL· μphve, μphv, μphvImper.μpf', μpf'e Do!Pres. Part.μvn doingPerf. Part.μμωθ, μμμ donePassivelacking; vulgar «μμπμμ» formed from μμμ

**384.** Infinitive: <u>pub</u> to say; (weakened from Classic <u>uub</u>). Aorist Stem: <u>pu-</u>

Aorist puh, puhp, pume puhu, puhu, puhu, said Imper. put, put Say! Pres. Part. pung saying Perf. Part. pumo, putp said Passive punch to be said

385. [*Anguli* see 221, 227, 233, 242, 247, 256, 263, 268, 295, 298, 305.

**386.** Infinitive:  $h_j h_{m_l}$  to fall (contracted and weakened from Classic  $m_h h_m h_{h_l}$ ). Aorist Stem:  $h_h h_{m_l}$ 

Aorist *μύμω*, *μύμω*, *μύμω*, *μύμω*, *μύμω*, *μύμω* Imper. *μύμμ'*μ, *μύμξ'*μ or *μύμμ*μ, *μύμξ*μ Fall down [I fell Pres. Part. *μύμη* (μ*jύη*) or *μύμη* falling Perf. Part. *μύμω*δ, *μύμμ*μ or *μύμω*δ fallen

Note: Classic  $w^{\underline{\nu}} \underline{\ell} w^{\underline{\nu}} \underline{\ell}_{l}$  became first  $\underline{r}^{\underline{\nu}} \underline{\ell} - \underline{\nu} \underline{\ell}_{l}$ , and the form  $\underline{r}^{\underline{\nu}} \underline{\ell} - is$  still in use instead of  $\underline{\ell}^{\underline{\nu}} \underline{\ell} - : \underline{r}^{\underline{\nu}} \underline{\ell} w_{j}; \underline{r}^{\underline{\nu}} \underline{\ell} \underline{\ell}' r; \underline{r}^{\underline{\nu}} \underline{\ell} w_{j}$ .

387. july to weep, to cry; Aorist Stem: july-

The particle in Present and Imperfect Indicative is  $l_{\mu\nu}$  instead of  $l_{\mu\nu}$  (see 220).

Aorist [mgh, [mghn, [mgme. [mghue, [mghue, [mghue, [mghue] Imper. [m'g, [mgk'e Cry! [] wept Prohib. sh'[mn, sh'[me Do not cry! Pres. Part. [mgma, ueping Perf. Part. [mgma, [mgua, [mgua]

**388.**  $\delta h \mu_l$  1) to give birth to; 2) to be born (Classic  $\delta h - m h - \mu_l$ ) Aorist Stem:  $\delta h$ -

Aorist  $\delta \iota_{mp}$ ,  $\delta \iota_{mp}$ ,  $\delta \iota_{m\ell}$  I was Imper.  $\delta \iota_{\ell'p}$ ,  $\delta \iota_{\ell'}$ ;  $\delta \iota_{\ell'p}$  Give birth! Be born! [born Pres. Part.  $\delta \iota_{mq}$  being born, giving birth Perf. Part.  $\delta \iota_{md}$ ,  $\delta \iota_{\ell p}$  born

**389.** μωθ I am there, I exist, I am — has only Indicative Present and Imperfect, inflected without the particle μ<sub>l</sub> (see **216**) Ind. Pres. μωθ, μωυ, μωυ, μωυε, μωμε, μωμ I am... Imperf. μωμ, μωμμ, μωμν, μωμβω, μωμβω, μωμβω, I was...

The negative is formed with  $\xi : \xi \mu \omega d$ ,  $\xi \mu \omega \mu$  (see 347) The lacking forms are supplied by the secondary formation from Classic  $\mu \mu \omega d - \mu \mu \mu$  to live:

**390.**  $l_{l}$  to be there, to stand there, to stay — which is regular and has all the Tenses and Moods. A orist Stem:  $l_{l}$ 

In Istand I stand (Sub. Pres. Istand) Present 4p 4th up 1 was staying (Sub. Imp. 4th up) Imperf. upunh hhumd Ishall Future Condit. ""hmf hhungf I should stay կեցալ, կեցար, կեցաւ․ կեցանը, կեցաը, կեցան Aorist Imper. 4 h g h' p, 4 h g f' p Stay! Il stood if h' hEump, if h' hEump Do not stay! Prohib. Pres. Part. 4Lyng standing, staying Perf. Part. 469mo, 4696p stood Fut. Part. 465 mine about to stay, to stand

**391.**  $\mu_{\mu}$  to be able (contracted from  $\mu_{\mu}$   $\mu_{\mu}$  which is a secondary formation from Classic  $\mu_{\mu}$   $\mu_{L}$ .)

Indicative Present and Imperfect are without the particle  $l_{\mu}$  (216). In order to be distinguished from the Indicative,  $l_{\mu\nu}$  is used in the Subjunctive.

	Ind.	Subj.
Present	<i>ון נוווון</i> I can, I am able	<i>կարենամ</i> etc.
Negative	չեմ կրնար etc.	չկարենամ etc.
Imperf.	կընայի I could	կարենայի etc.

Ind.

Negative	չէի կընար etc. չկարենայի etc.
Aorist	կրցայ, կրցար, կրցաւ.
	կրցանը, կրցաը, կրցան I was able
Imper.	<i>اروبو ار اروبو باریو او او</i>
Future	պիտի կրնամ (or - կարենամ) I shall be able
Condit.	պիտի կրնայի (or - կարենայի) I should be able
Pres. Part.	цруп also цшрп (from Classic цшры) able

As an Adjective and in the meaning of "powerful", only *lympng* is used.

Perf. Part. 4pgurð, 4pghp able

Fut. Part. 4phmine, 4mphimine about to be able

**392.**  $u_{\mu}$  to sit down, to be seated; Aorist Stem:  $u_{\mu}$  ( $u_{\mu}$ )

Aorist նստայ, նստար, նստաւ նստանը, նստաը, նստան I sat

Imper. uh'um, umf'e Sit!

Prohib. Jh' Lumpp, Jh' Lumpp Do not sit!

Pres. Part. Lumny sitting

Perf. Part. Lumus, Lumbn sat

Note:  $uum p_l$  has also a regular inflection according to the Second Conjugation: Aorist uum by y, Imper. uum f'  $(uum p_p)$ ,  $uum by f'_p$ .

**393.**  $n_{L} u_{f} u'$  I have. The Infinitive is a secondary formation:  $n_{L} u_{f} u_{f}$  to have;  $n_{L} u_{f} u'$  is used only in the Indicative, and without the particle  $4\mu$  (see 216);  $n_{L} u_{f} u_{u} u'$  is used for all the other Moods and Tenses.

	Ind.	Subj.
Present	ունիմ, ունիս,	ունենամ , ունե–
	ncup I have	Նաս , `ունենայ
	ունինը, ունիը,	ունենանը, ունե–
	ក្នុងក្នុង	նաբ, ունենան
Negative	รุกะนิคมิ, รุกะนิคม,	<i>չ</i> ունենամ․․․
	عسد in the sec. I have not وسد in the second	
Imperf.	ունէի, ունէիր,	ունենայի, ունե-
	neut n I had	նայիր, ունենար
	ունէինը, ունէիը,	ունենայինը, ունե-
	חבעל הע	նայիք, ունենային

	Ind.	Subj.
Negative	չունէի, չունէիր,	չու <b>նենայի</b> ․․․
-	Snewsp etc. I had not	
Aorist	ունեցալ, ունե_	
	ցար, ունեցաւ I had	
	ունեցանը, ունե–	
	ցաջ, ունեցան	
Imper.	псивур'р, псивур'е Нач	ve!
Prohib.	մի' ունենար, մի' ունե	ம்ய P Do not have!
	պիտի ունենամ I shall I	
Condit.	պիտի ունենայի I should	1 have
Pres. Part.	nculynn having	
	ունեցած, ունեցեր had	
Fut. Part.	ունենալու, ունենալիք	about to have

Note:  $n \ge b \ge b \ge d$  for indicative Present and Imperfect with the particle 4' (4' $n \ge b \ge b \ge d$ , 4' $n \ge b \ge b \ge d$ ,  $z \ge b \ge b \ge d$ ). It denotes the action of acquiring possession in the Future, whereas  $n \ge b \ge d$  denotes the state of possession in the Present.

**396.** *ululy* to begin, to start; Stem: *ulu-*Ind. Pres. 4p uluful i am starting; staf ulufp I do not start Ind. Imperf. 4p uhut h I was starting; 5th uhut p I was not starting սկսալ, սկսար, սկսաւ. սկսանը, սկսաը, Aorist ulumu I started uhuf' or uhuh'n, uhuf'n or uhuhyf'n Start! Imper. Pres. Part. ulung beginning (beginner) Perf. Part. uluud, ulula begun Fut. Part. uljuting about to begin 397. multo give; Aorist Stem: mnL-The particle for Present and Imperfect Indicative is Im. (220). կու տամ, կու տաս, կու տայ, կու տանը, Present hne mue, hne muss I am giving Imperf. կու տայի, կու տայիր, կու տար. կու multip, her multip, her multi I was giving Aorist տուի, տուիը, տուաւ. տուինը, տուիք, տուին Imper. [] gave mn'Lp, mnLf'g Give! Prohib. if h' mmp, if h' mmp Do not give! Pres. Part. mning giving (giver) Perf. Part. mn. wo, mn. Ep given Fut. Part. mujne, mujhe about to give Passive input to be given 398. multip, to carry (away, off); Aorist Stem: mupտարի, տարիր, տարաւ. տարինը, տարիջ, Aorist mmpfu I carried mu'p, mupf'e Carry! Imper. if h' multipp, if h' multipe Do not carry! Prohib. Pres. Part. muling, mupng carrying (carrier) Perf. Part. mupud, muphp carried mmpnch to be carried Passive 399. 4pp for to be broken off; Aorist Stem: 4pp forփրթայ, փրթար, փրթաւ. փրթանը, փրթաջ Aorist 4. I was broken off lbroken off! hpfff' and hpffh'p. hpff'p and hpffbgf'p Be Imper. Prohib. if h' hp fd hp, if h' hp fd hp Be not be broken off! Perf. Part. uppfaud, uppfalp had been broken off.

### PARTICLES — ሆርሀኄኑካ

## ADVERBS — UTUMPUS

400. Adverbs, Prepositions, Conjunctions and Interjections are called Particles — Umuliph.

Derivation of Adverbs

401. Adverbs are regularly formed:

from almost every Adjective without any change placed in front of the Verb, Adverb or Adjective they are to modify:

գեղեցիկ կ'երգէ այս գեղեցիկ օրիորդը

402. from Adjectives followed by the Indefinite Article Inferience 2 min Inferience 402. from Adjectives followed by the Indefinite Article Inferience 2 min Inferience 402. from Adjectives followed by the Indefinite Article Inferience 402. from Adjectives followed by the Indefinite Article Inferience 402. from Adjectives followed by the Indefinite Article Inferience 402. from Adjectives followed by the Indefinite Article Inferience 402. from Adjectives followed by the Indefinite Article Inferience 402. from Adjectives followed by the Indefinite Article Inferience 402. from Inferience 403. from Infe

126

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

403. by adding the suffixes  $-o_{\mu}\xi u$ ,  $-\mu \mu \mu$ ,  $-\mu \xi u$ ,  $-\mu \eta \mu \mu$ ,  $-\mu \eta \mu$ ,  $-\mu \eta \mu$  to Adjectives:

արագօրէն	quickly	պարգապէս	simply
պարղօրէն	simply	դառնապէս	bitterly
ղառնօրէն	bitterly	որտագին	heartily
<i>ճա</i> չա և ա և	valiantly	կարօտագին	longingly
մտերմաբար	intimately	դառնագին	bitterly
Համեստաբար	modestly	յաճախակի	often
յայտնապէս	openly, evidently	փոփոխակի	alternatively

404. from inflected Nouns (Case-forms) of which the Case is not always obvious and in some is doubtful. The Case-forms are either Classic or Modern.

Adverbs with obvious Case-forms:

#### 405.

վերելան	they went upstairs
վ ե ը ը ննացին	they remained above
վերէն ինկաւ	he fell from above
վար ձգեցին	they threw down
վարը կ՝աչխատէր	he worked below
վարէն կը կանչեն	they call from below
ներս մտան	they came in
ህերսն են	they are inside
ներսէս զգացի	I felt in myself
ղուրս գնա	go out
գունոն քն ումասէ	he is waiting outside
ղ (ու) ըս էն պաչարեցին	they beseiged from the outside
առջեւ անցիր	go at the ahead
առջեւէն կը քալեն	they walk at the head
ետեւ նայեցաւ	he looked back
ետեւ զնա	go back
ետեւէս մի' զար	do not walk (come) after me
ղիմաց անցան	they went across
ղ ի մ ա ց ը մնացին	they remained across
ղիմացէն կու գայ	he (she, it) comes from across

**406.** 

ujuop 4p 4Epymung 4npop the work will be done today վաղը պիտի յանձնեն they will deliver to-morrow երէկ չհասանը we did not arrive yesterday 4 μ μ μ μ μ μ μ μ μ μ he was still alive last year шп.ппс вшрп учшп nobody was there this morning (J) w n w g [uf, t w g r fuouf listen first, then speak (1) w n w g n L p & f qn L zwh b g he guessed from the first 4 μ p g f u (μ un e f u) 4p un huun hue we'll see each other չուտով եկուր later come soon (fast) բարով երթաս fare well

Adverbs in Classic Case-forms

407. Instrumental:

արդարեւ ապերախտ էր truly, he was ungrateful արդեւջ (արդեօջ) կ՝ապրի՞ is he alive, indeed? p w p b L good-day **դ** в п с ш р ш с, S ш ц р с ц р с ц р he hardly hears чрерше 4р драср he is easily distracted herme, hermende (heroe) 4mpny & he is really able խստիւ արգիյեց he forbade strictly 4 μμμμι ηθηπς ξ naturally (of course) he is dissatisfied սիրով կ՝րնդունիմ I agree gladly (with And Swutp hurry on! [love)

408. Ablative:  $j = i \int_{a} \frac{1}{a} \int_{a} \frac$  Adverbs in - muy, -nuy, -nuy, -op

409.

Adverbs formed by the Pronominal Articles -u,  $-\eta$ (-un) -h and suffixes:

410.

Note: wywyhuh, wynyhuh, wywyhuh, wywyhuh, boybughuh such, like, are Adjectives.

411.

 $m = l_{i} \xi_{i} d_{i} d_$ 

Snu Eu	they are here
4 пи Бушь	he came hither
Հոսկէ անցան	they passed here by
հ ուտ՝ ղրկեցի	I sent it thither (to you)
Հոտ ո°վ կայ	who is there (with you)?
հոտկէ լսեցի	I heard it from there (you)
Հոն Հատայ	I arrived there (a "third" place)
Հոն կը բնակէր	he dwelled there
Հոնկե դարձայ	I returned from there

## CLASSIFICATION OF ADVERBS

The Adverbs are classified as follows:

Adverbs of Place — Տեղական Մակբայ 412.

ուը	where, whither
ուսկէ ուսկից ուստի ուրկէ , ուրկից	where from
ահառասիկ	here it is
ահաւաղիկ	there it is
ահառանիկ	there it is
ամենուստել	from every quarter
ամենուրեք	anywhere, whither you will
այլուստեք	from another place [place
այլուր	elsewhere, in some other place, to another
այս տեղ	here, hither (near the speaker)
այդ տեղ .	there, thither (near the person spoken with)
այն տեղ	there, thither (near a third person)
Հեռու	far
Shancum	from afar
វៅ ២ ៣ ៥ ៣ ៣ ៣ ៣ ៣ ៣ ៣ ៣ ៣ ៣ ៣ ៣ ៣ ៣ ៣ ៣ ៣	from near
вот Бупср	come near
ாத எடயாகழ	from nowhere

See also 408 a, 411 c.

Adverbs of Time - Ժամանակական Մակբայ

#### 413.

ե° րբ ծնած է when (interrog.) has he been born? երբ (որ) չէիր սպասեր when (relative) you did not expect այժմ արդ Հիմա now we understand யு சமீதம் எநாத லாற from now fix the day! he has not yet finished դեռ չէ աւարտած տակաւին կըպնդե՞ս still you do insist! արդէն ուչ է already it is late նախ թսեմ․․․ first let me tell . . . மமற் கடயாய9 first of all այս է կացութիւնը ներat the present time this is the situa-4 m j h u Ition mmpphp ξp mughm jhu in the past time it was different յոյս կայ ապագային in the future there is hope ապա գոչեց then he spoke loud յետոյ կը Հոգանը here after we take care of it վաղ կամ անադան soon or late երբեմն now and then, sometimes երբեմն երբեմն from time to time երբեք յսա՞ծ էք have you ever heard? երբեջ Համաձայնա՞ծ եմ have I ever agreed? երբեք never! երբեք չեմ Համաձայնած I have never agreed пу Бребе never կանուխ պառկէ go early to bed արագ կը չարժի չուտ կը մոռնայ չուտով կը յուղուի he moves fast he forgets easily he is quickly emotioned

հանապաղ միչտ ցանկ մինչ մինչ մինչդեռ աենը կ՝աչիսա- while we were working աեինը չատոնց վաղուց՝ մոռցած եմ I have forgotten it long ago այսու Հետեւ ձերն է hence (from now on) you have the word (to speak) իսօսքը шублічьты улья thence (from then on) he kept sillent ημηδεμι (μη μππεμύ they are fighting again η Ε η μ μη μ ή (μ'μπμιζμημεθ | propose once more d un u ξ d un u μμμμμμ- from hour to hour he becomes weaնայ lker οης οη μ'ωδή from day to day he grows சி கிக் தி கி கி from week to week he defers it *ձդձդէ* und u f und f u 4p danfunch from month to month he is changed mmph f mmph 4p smph from year to year it is worn off ημης ημη μη μησημα- from century to century they go រំណររ [higher See also 408 b, 410. Adverbs of Manner — Որակական Մակբայ **414.** a) բռնի տարին they took (him) with force ի° նչպէս իմացաւ how did he find out? ի՞նտոր չսոսկացիր how were you not afraid? Հագիւ պրծանը we hardly escaped Հազիւ Հազ կը կարդայ he barely reads սաստիկ բարկացաւ he was very angry 2

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

անգլինըէն կարդալ	to read English
SmjEptu fuouhj	to speak Armenian

Note: The suffix  $-l_P l^{L_P}$  is added to names of nations in order to denote their language. It forms the respective Adjectives and Adverbs:  $2uy_{L_P} l^{L_P} l^$ 

ակամայ եկայ I came involuntarily կում ու ունձնատուր we surrendered voluntarily եղանք 4 ... i ... j ... h ... j ... you must admit willingly or unդունելու էք [willingly he walks slowly վճարեմ չչարժեցաւ անգամ he didn't even move whene in he it purpura- they certainly will return โกกร์เ բոլորովին մոռցալ I forgot entirely η μ h f f f u μ μ μ μthey almost faintedζ h μ μ μμου μζ h μ μμου μδ μ μμου μψμου μ< See also 409.

b) The Instrumentals of the Infinitive of any Verb and of abstract Nouns, form Adverbs of manner:

μ n p δ k [ n ų l'ump hu p
μ m [ n ų m p δ k ] n ų l'ump hu p
μ m [ n ų m p δ k ] n ų h' k p q ξ
μ he sings while weaving
n k z m q p n k [ d k m u μ ≤ k - follow with attention

Adverbs of Cause — Պատճառական Մակբայ 415.

133

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

யயுய எடிடியீம் mului- therefore, consequently bear with  $g\xi_{\ell}$  constance Հետեւաբար пситр ուրեմն Interrogative Adverbs -- Հարցական Մակբայ 416. արդեօք գիտէի՞ն did they perhaps kno գիտէի՞ն արդեօք ( մի՛ թե չէի՞ աոստացած had I not promised? did they perhaps know? Affirmative Adverbs — Հաստատական Մակբայ 417. m/n' ves անչուչտ, անտարակոյս no doubt about that! แบนนุษาริการ แบนนุษารังการ necessarily Հարկա՛ւ, ի Հարկէ of course [tainly յիրաւի, իրօբ, արդարեւ, Հաւաստեաւ really, truly, cer-Negative Adverbs — Ժխտական Մակբայ 418. 11'5, 5K' no (in simple denial) ո՛չ երբեք ամենեւին ոչ ո՛չ բնաւ not at all (in contradiction) ıl [ı' , 5not (in prohibition) ns hul not even neither . . . nor . . . n5... n5... ոչ միայն․․․ այլ նաեւ (եւ) not only... but also ... pu's phyth far be it! Dubitative Adverbs — Թէական Մակբայ 419. யாரு **டீ** ம தன்காய<sup>ு</sup>ட ஏசிக் did he oversee us perhaps գուցէ սխալիմ perhaps I am wrong Թերեւս դայ perhaps he comes

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

## COMPARISON OF ADVERBS

420. The degrees of Adverbs are formed in the same manner as those of Adjectives.

For the Comparative is used the Adverb  $mlf_lh\cdots$  guin For the Superlative is used the Adverb  $mlf_lf$   $mlf_lf$   $mlf_lf$ . Other Particles and ways of expressing the degrees see 100-105.

Note the following forms:

Positive	Comparative	Superlative
یسی much		แม้รู่นรูบ รัณน (or แระได้)
much	more	most

સાર	նուազ	ամէնէն քիչ or նուտղագոյն
few, some	less	least

# PREPOSITIONS — ՆԵԽԵԳՐՈՒԹԻԻՆ

421. Prepositions are words expressing the relation of one member in a sentence to another.

Many Prepositions are taken from Case-forms or Adverbs. Prepositions are associated with particular Cases — for the most, the Genitive or Dative — which must be learned for each Preposition. Particles are called Postpositions when put after the Noun.

# THE CLASSIC PREPOSITIONS

422. In Classic Armenian, the following Prepositions played an important role:  $\mu_{III}$ ,  $\mu_{I}$ ,  $\eta_{I}$ ,  $\eta_{I}$ ,  $\eta_{I}$ ,  $\mu_{IIII}$ ,  $\mu_{IIIII}$ .

They were used with different Cases and had different meanings according to the Case.

In Modern Armenian, they are as a rule suppressed. The Preposition q may still be used to denote the Accusative (see 93).

The others are used only in idiomatic expressions:

423. *un* at, near, with, to:

un U,umntud IInfunctigue he went to God un unutte fu at the most

**Monnul Ununger** the letter of the Apostle Paul to the Galatians

шп шjų (шju, шjb) կр щшпши ршбыви. to that I answer..

	424.	ընդ	to,	at,	by,	with,	through:
ընդ	ամէ	նը		ä	all in	n all	
ընդ	ste			i	n th	e mid	lst

## PREPOSITIONS - ጌርԽርԴՐՈՒԹՒՒՆ

421. Prepositions are words expressing the relation of one member in a sentence to another.

Many Prepositions are taken from Case-forms or Adverbs.

Prepositions are associated with particular Cases — for the most, the Genitive or Dative — which must be learned for each Preposition. Particles are called Postpositions when put after the Noun.

#### THE CLASSIC PREPOSITIONS

422. In Classic Armenian, the following Prepositions played an important role:  $\mu_{II}$ ,  $\mu_{I}$ ,  $\eta_{I}$ ,  $\eta_{I}$ ,  $\eta_{I}$ ,  $\mu_{III}$ ,  $\mu_{IIII}$ .

They were used with different Cases and had different meanings according to the Case.

In Modern Armenian, they are as a rule suppressed. The Preposition q may still be used to denote the Accusative (see 93).

The others are used only in idiomatic expressions :

423. un at, near, with, to:

wn. U.umn.wd hnhun.kyw. he went to God wn. wn.w.k.fu at the most

Պօղոսի Առաջելոյն ԹուղԹ առ Գաղատացիս

the letter of the Apostle Paul to the Galatians

առ այղ (այս, այն) կը պատասխանեմ...to that I answer..

424. המק to, at, by, with, through: המק של לער all in all המק לל אין in the midst

*ընդ որ* by what road (= ընդոր, ինտոր how) ընդ Հակառակն on the contrary

425. pum according to

a)

ըստ իս	according to me, in my opinion
Աւետարան ըստ Ս	Cum [d f nu ] the Gospel according to Matthew
ըստ բախտի	at a venture
լսա ինքեան	in itself, essentially
օր ըստ օրէ	every day
ամ ըստ ամէ	every year
ըստ ամենայնի	totally
ըստ այսմ (այդմ,	այնոք) accordingly
ըստ իմիջ	relatively, partially
ըստ որում	as, therefore

426. h (weakened to J when followed by a vowel) to, of, by, for, in, at, upon, during, with:

ի ձեռն	through (the hand of)
ի պատկեր Աստուծոյ	in the image of God
h Zand	in Rome, to Rome
ի փրկուԹիւն մարդկան	for the Salvation of men
յամենայն սրտէ	from all heart

b) The Prepositions  $\mu$  is associated with  $\mu mg$ ,  $\mu \mu p$ 

բաց ի քեզմէ	except you
մանկութենէ ի վեր	since childhood
չաբաթե մ՝ի վեր	since one week
լեռն ի վեր	up the mountain
լեռն ի վար	down the mountain
երեսն ի վեր	to his face
ականջո ի վար	into my ear
օրն ի բուն	all day
դիչերն ի բուն	all night
ծմեռն ի գլուխ	all winter

427. y to, as far as, till:

ரயுப்பு	till today	
ցայղ վայր (ցայն,	guyu) till here, there	
ցայժմ	till now	
ցկեանս, ցմաՀ	until death	
ցաեսուԹիւն	until we meet (see each other) again (go	od-
մինչեւ ցե°րբ	until when? [t	bye)

#### PREPOSITIONS IN MODERN ARMENIAN

**428.** In modern language few Particles are placed before the Noun. The Preposition

F. i.:

unung hush ste jugnghe you won't succeed without me unung euleph flung he remained without company uhush uhush succeed without company uhush uhug uhugh succeed without me he remained without company uhush succeed without succeed without succeed without succeed uhush succeed without succeed without succeed without succeed without succeed uhush succeed without succeed wi

ηξημ dEq h har quype, dbug dEug ηξημ qhrq hp gm-[ξμug you were coming to us while we were walking towards the village

բացի այրերէն կային նաեւ կիներ besides men there were իբրեւ մատնիչ like a traitor [also women բեղմէ կը զգուչանամ իբրեւ մատնիչէ l avoid you as a traitor.

#### MODERN POSTPOSITIONS

**429.** The majority of Particles are placed after the Noun. Such are:

ի վար	down (as	sociate	d with	the	Accusative,	see	<b>426</b> b)
ի վեր	up	"	••	n	"	,,	••
ղէմ	against	"		n	Dative		
Համար	for	"		"	**		
հետ	with	,,	"	••	"		
и́ош	near	n	"	**	"		
պէս	like	"	"	"	11		
ղատ	besides	"	"	"	Ablative		
ի վեր	since	"	,,	"	"		

մեղի դէմ են they are against us քեղի Համար դոշուեցայ I sacrificed myself for you *թեղի Համար դոշուեցայ* I sacrificed myself for you *թեղի Համար դոշուեցայ* I sacrificed myself for you *թեղի Համար* դոշուեցայ I sacrificed myself for you with the enemy

Note:  $\leq k_{ini}$  and  $f_{oini}$  may be used with the Genitive also (see 431):  $f_{hpi}$  for near us,  $d_{hpi} \leq k_{ini}$  with you.

Particles with Optional Position

430. The following Particles can be placed either before or after the Noun:

Sumlpummultagainst, with the DativeSumlpummultaccording to, with the DativeSumlpumlpumwith, together, with the Instrumental<br/>opposite, with the DativeImage: Sumlpumle<br/>upmlpumlpumleinstead of, with the DativeF. i.:F. i.:

Հակառակ բաղձանջիս or բաղձանջիս Հակառակ against my wish Համեմատ (Համաձայն) Հրամանիս or Հրամանիս Համեմատ (Համաձայն) according to my order

139

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

யுயாட பேயிழக் or போது பிழக்கு பிரிக்கு or பிழக்கு பிரிக்கு or

.

subyty a supumbting wedding dress (Classic Gen. Plural of supumble)

Հանդէպ մեր տան or մեր տան Հանդէպ opposite our house

*փոխանակ (փոխարէն) դեղի տուին Թոյն* they gave poison instead of medicine.

Postpositions with Articles

**431.** The following Postpositions are used with the Genitive; they may take an Article (Definite or Pronominal) and be used as Nouns:

И, п 2 h с : Цршиврики шп2bc before the wittnesses И, п ш 2 : шши шп2hcp, — шпш2p before the house (ри) шп2hcu, (pnc) шп2hcq, (ри) шпш2и, (pnc) шпш9q before me, before thee.

b in b :  $\delta$  with pure binds, -b in b in (

Υμρμι: (μβ) ημμητυ μμημι, — μμημιμ above my head υμρμι: ημιστι υμπηρί υμημμι, — υμημμιμ below the wall μαίστιβμων υμημι υμημι under tyranny

4 pm j: qm zm h d pm on the field, (hd) d pm upon me

 $S = u + \eta = u + u + \eta = u +$ 

- U  $\xi g : e^{\mu i \eta} e^{\mu i \eta} \delta \xi g$  in the town,  $d = \ell \eta \delta \xi g_{\mu}$  among us,  $(\ell \mu d) \delta \xi g_{\mu}$  in me,  $(\ell \mu n L) \delta \xi g_{\eta}$  in thee
- Кпи: Лори епи near my mother, with my mother (ри) епи near me, Лер епи near us
- ን է մ : արեւու դէմ facing the sun առառան դէմ toward morning (իմ) դէմս opposite to me

Note: The Postposition  $q \xi d$  is used with the Dativ, and means against (see 429); but the Noun  $q \xi d$  is used with the Genitive and means facing, opposite.

 $J_{L_{p}} = \eta f J_{L_{p}}$  they are against us  $J_{L_{p}} = \eta f f f h h h$  they are facing us

S h η : hημομμ mhη or — mhημ in place (instead) of the (μθ) mhημ, (μπι) mhηη in my-, thy place [brother ψμωμιζεμαι mhη μαπιμ'υρ let us fight instead of fleeing

**δ** *π* L *p*  $\xi$  : *μ*L *μμ*μ*μ*μ*μ*μ *μ*μ*μ*μ around the table (*μμ*) *επ*L *μ* $\xi$ *μ*. (*μπ*L) *επ*L*μ* $\xi$ *η* around me, thee

Declension of Postpositions

**432.** All the Postpositions in **431** are inflected according to the First Declension (see **71** d, **72** d), with or without Definite or Pronominal Articles:

քաղաքին առջեւր	the front of the town
տան առջեւի ծառր	the tree in front of the house
	he fled before the army [garden
պարտէզին առջեւով քալէ՛	walk on the front side of the

Classic Form-cases as Postpositions

433. The following Classic Form-cases are used as Postpositions with the Genitive:

[ <i>&amp;Ln</i> 1/2 = hand]	լրտեսներու ձեռօբ	through (the hands of)
	( <i>ձեռամ</i> μ)	spies
[առիթ =	Հանդէսներու առ-	on occasion of feasts
occasion]	[] pL	
[1] [ y = in]	բարեկամներու	between friends
	I for Star	
[ <i>տ</i> = part]	ղըումի մասին	concerning money

141

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

 [blummifi = hlumminifi blumm- concerning character regard]
 μμμμμμ blummifi blumm- concerning character regard]

 [sumpi = grace]
 [lummifield]
 thanks to God

 Note: hlummifield and sumpifie may also precede the Noun:
 hlummifield

 shummifield and sumpifie may also precede the Noun:
 hlummifield

 shumifield and sumpifield
 concerning the people

 shumifield and sumpifield
 thanks to your efforts

 [mumifield]
 mumifield

 [super field]
 mumifield

 [super field]
 flummifield

 [super field]
 flummifield]

 [super field]
 flumifield]

 [super field]
 flumifield]

 [super field]
 flumifield]

 [sup field]
 flumifield]
 </

Adverbs used as Postpositions

434. The following Adverbs are used as Postpositions with the Ablative:

դոնէն ներս	inside the door		
տնեն դուրս	outside the house		
լեռնէն վար	down the mountain		
ծայոէն վեր	up the rock		
գետէն ասդին	this side of the river		
փողոցէն անդին	the other side of the street		
ជួយបន្តែ យកឃន្តិ (រួ	(m, m, m, g) before (time) the lesson		
ծեղմէ առաջ	before (order) you		
մեզմէ ետեւ, —	յետոյ, — ետքը		
-	after us (place, order, time)		
र्रह्ममुद्ध मुद्ध मुद्ध है कि मुद्ध कि	after you (order, time, place) [land		
supphipeti shnn (Classic: shn μ) far from the father-			
մօրմէն դաղանի	without mother's knowledge, in secret from. the mother.		

**435.** The Postpositions  $m_{\mu}m_{\ell}$ ,  $h_{\mu}m_{\ell}$ ,  $h_{$ 

դոնէն ներս	inside the door,			
but դրան ներսէն	from inside the door			
ժայոէն վեր	up the rock,			
but ժայոնն վերեւը	the heights of the rock.			

# Inflected Particles

**436.** Postpositions which can be inflected (71 d, 72 d, 432, 435), can also have a second inflection taking their Genitive Singular as base and adding the Definite Article in double  $(-\nu_{\underline{\mu}})$ . They acquire thus a possessive meaning.

before, first
ast, behind
nside
outside
oehind
upon
above
iear, with
ınder

437. The Declension is according to the First:

Sing.	Plur.
N. A. Sumpti Jpujhin that which is	ծառին վրայինները
G. D. Sum fu dpugfufu on the tree	ծառին վրայիններուն
Abl. ծառին վրայինէն	ծառին վրայիններէն
	ծառին վրայիններով

# CONJUNCTIONS — ていりりじゅ

**438.** Conjunctions connect words, phrases or sentences. They are of two classes: Coördinate — connecting independent sentences or similar constructions — and Subordinate — connecting dependent clauses.

## COÖRDINATE CONJUNCTIONS

**439.** Copulative or Disjunctive Conjunctions imply a connection or separation of thought as well as of words. Let and; me and; me, me the method of the m

440. Adversative Conjunctions imply a contrast: pung but (referring to the same subject) pul but (referring to another subject) myz, Sumpu, umhuyu but h. umhuyu, umhuyu (pung) h. uyungtu, pung umhuyu but yet, neverthless

441. Causal Conjunctions introduce a cause or reason:  $\eta h$ ,  $\eta \mu h$ ,  $\mu \mu h$ ,  $\mu \mu h$  for  $\eta \mu \eta h$ ,  $\mu \mu h$  because

442. Illative Conjunctions denote an inference: nump, nump he, stanturpup, pum stanturpup, mpy, mumu, nuptific therefore, accordingly

# SUBORDINATE CONJUNCTIONS

443. Conditional Conjunctions denote a condition or hypothesis:

[&; h[&; if h[&; nz, [d; nz, mum [d; nz if not, else [nu] h[d; but if [nu] y u [nu] u, u [nu] u if only, provided

444. Comparative Conjunctions imply comparison as well as condition:

իսր Թէ, իբրեւ Թէ, իբր այն Թէ, որպէս Թէ as if ինչպէս որ just as — քան — than

445. Concessive Conjunctions denote a concession or admission:

թեեւ, թեպետ (եւ) although անդամ եթե even if

446. Temporal Conjunctions express time: hpp when, np, hpp np when uhiste until uhiste while imp guib before hmp (jem, jemnj) after [mhnji np, minfommtu np as soon as

447. Consecutive and Final Conjunctions express result and purpose:

np in order that my ing ing so that np  $\xi$ - lest (that... not)

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

448. Causal Conjunctions express cause: public np since public since indeed

# CONJUNCTIONS IN EXEMPLES

### 449.

170
եւ: ես եւ եղբայրս I and my brother
ாட: 4யுறம் எட சீயுறறு the father and the mother
umbe: melummhe, umbe dengebe to work, also to enjoy
այլ եւ։ ոչ միայն ես, այլ եւ (այլ նաեւ) ընկերներա not only, but my friends, too
մ ի ա ն դ ա մ ա յ ն : — Հոդալու է ի I had to take care of that too
<i>m</i> <sub>L</sub> (always Postpositive): <sub>L</sub> ແຼ ແຼ ແຼນ ເມັນ ເມັນ ເມັນ ເມັນ ເມັນ ເມັນ ເມັນ ເມັນ
կши, цши [d f: шξęп цши шцшиўп the eye or the ear, չцпушь цши [d f źпьцьу he couldn't or he didn't want to
<i>w</i> <sub><i>L</i></sub> <i>w</i> <sub><i>L</i></sub> : <i>m</i> <sub><i>k</i></sub> <i>w</i> <sub><i>u</i></sub> <i>u</i> <sub><i>l</i></sub> <i>w</i> <sub><i>l</i></sub> <i>w</i> <sub><i>l</i></sub> <i>w</i> <sub><i>l</i></sub> both saw and spoke
$[\mathcal{F} \xi' \cdots \mathcal{F} \xi' : \mathcal{F} \xi' ]$ <i>uuquu <math>[\mathcal{F} \xi' ]</math>uuquu</i> he both laughed and wept
אין
[Ժ է (introducing quotation): վմուեց [Ժէ անարժան է he de- cided that he was unworthy
որ (introducing quotation): Հրամայեց որ սպաննեն he or- dered to kill him
הף (= בְּחָשׁ): הבעשון הף הבצשקשע, לעההלבקשון when I saw you were late, I was worried
ղուրս որ ելլես when you go out
pur jy: 4p dal, pur jy il 4nunphp it bends, but does not break

huų: Suytptup ternnymlunu įtyne ξ, huų ympuųtptup muhmųmu the Armenian language is a European, but Persian is an Asiatic language

L பய կ ய յ ն, բ ய յ ց பய կ ш յ ն : ) — չեմ пւրш նш բ பய կ ш յ ն ե ւ ш յ ն щ է и : բ ա յ ց ե ւ ш յ ն щ է и : ) and yet I do not deny

θ ξ ± ι,θ ξ щ ξ m:- ų μmξ ų μημύμευ, ζμ μμμύμευθ ξ μ ξ m ± ι:although he knows the secret, he doesnot betray it

- n ¿ [ ] ; [ ] ; [ ] ; ... ų nų gunt, uy į ų nų nų m ky he did not steal but rob
- הי ל ליש ג'ע סד ל --- שעסק חבש, שון בר (עשבר) לע-יד ל ל ל ל שי ג'ע : ל ששע שניון not only useless, but also [dangerous]
- այլ, Հապա: դուք չէք յանցաւոր, այլ (Հապա) պարագաները not you are responsible (guilty), but the circumstances
- emu, emu βξ: mchili pmc f shruhi emu (βξ) <--phuhen umpnch mhuuhi it is better to die than to see the Fatherland enslaved
- մունաւանդ։ մի' ըլլար Թչնոսմի մարդու, մանաւանդ բարեկամի be not an enemy of men, but especially of friends
- մանաւանդ որ։ ներեցի, մանաւանդ որ յանցանջ այունէի I did forgive, all the more I was guilty too
- մանաւանդ ԹԷ : չընդունեցայ, մանաւանդ ԹԷ մեր– ժեղի I did not admit, nay, I refused
- μμų (to introduce a new sentence, pleonastic): μμ<sup>ο</sup>υξ μψ what am 1?

եւ пξ, եւ пξ μυ μ : — երեսը նшյեցшյ ( Ididn'teven шъңшմ ξ- : երեиը шъңшմ ξъщуեցшу ( look at him шъңшմ, μυ μ (postposit.): եи шъңшմ (μи μ) ղшրմшցшу I was amazed myself

נחן ז ו ו ע (preposit.): - הנשהגעויצי גרף קושה not even the teacher knew it

שרית: ב שרית: אחסש אסטר friends לא - געניים אוריים hulpmpn:  $\pi \iota u m h$ :  $\pi \iota u m h$ :  $\pi \iota u m h$   $\mu \iota$ : 1 came, so give the key  $n \leftarrow p \leftarrow u \lor v$ :  $(-n^{\circ} d (or n^{\circ} d n \leftarrow p \leftarrow u \lor u)) = u \lor u \lor v$  so,  $u = u = u = u \vdash u \lor v$ : (who does begin?)յաղԹուեցան, (ապա) ուրեմն Հպատակեցան they were defeated, thus (or: and then) they were made subjects пр: ( l'pubi пр (пријзи др) зинипари дава при з и др: ( I tell in order to convince you  $\begin{array}{cccc}
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \eta & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu & \mu \\
 &$ վասն զի։ hu > n L n n : [will որով հետեւ : կր ննջէ, որով հետեւ յոդնած է he is sleeping because he is tired  $m u_l m p f : (- l_l m p f_l p \xi, \delta_{l_l} f_{\ell_l})$  if however it is im- $[h u_l f_l f_l] f : (possible, let it go$ Թող Թէ։ եւ ոչ իսկ բերան բացաւ, Թող Թէ չաղhunght p he didn't even open his mouth, far from chattering (much less did he chatter)  $[\mu \mu \mu \beta \xi, \mu \mu \mu b \mu \rho \delta \xi : (-\xi \xi \mu m b u b b \mu as if n \mu u \xi u \beta \xi, \mu m \rho \delta h u \beta \xi : (he did not see)$ 4. μ h h k : - μ g m h k p it was almost full այսին ըն ։ որթեի, այսինըն կանգուն կեցէ՛ը Orti, it means: Stand!

450. Conjunctions like Prepositions are closely related to Adverbs, and are either petrified cases of Nouns, Pronouns and Adjectives, or obscured phrases (Verbs). Such are: lang [lf, qpb-[lf, npnd{ $tmbc}$ , pum mjud, mjunc mdbbmjbhc, pumthmbcnpnfh, pum npncd, mjufbeb, mbamd. This is the reason why Adverbs can be used as Conjunctions, and vice versa.

## INTERJECTIONS - UPPS, UP 401-10-16

451. Interjections are natural expressions of feeling; some of them are derived from inflected parts of speech.

The following comprises most of the Interjections in common use.

- 1. Joy: " ah! " 4 hey! o'fu huzza!
- 2. Pain: μ/μ, μμ/μ, μμ/μ, οΦ, ο, ος woe! Sorrow: μιμ/η, Εηπ'ιμ, μμμπ'μ alas!
- 3. Wish, desire: *Lpwuhf*, *Lpuf*, *n*<sup>r</sup>*Lp fp ff*, *lpp f*<sup>r</sup>*L ff* would that...! oh! might it be!
- 5. Exhortation: ζμ' μμ, ο'δ come! μεγγε'υ, μμγρ'υ, μεγγε', μιμρβ' bravo!

Call: u' d, u' d,  $\zeta \xi'$ ,  $\delta o'$  (to a man),  $e^{u d}$  (to a woman) hey!

- 6. Contempt: n' 4,  $q_{\mu\nu}' p_{2}$ ,  $\mu n' \sigma' \beta'$  shame!  $\beta n' \mu$ ,  $q_{\mu} n' \mu$  fie! pooh!
- 7. Threat:  $\mu'_{J}$ ,  $\mu'_{J}$ ,  $\zeta \mu'_{J}$  woe!
- 8. Silence: "", ""Lu, "pp" um shh! hist! hush!
- 9. Welcome: ng gn' ju, pupp' hallo! welcome!

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

# PART SECOND - ሆじሀኄ ԵՐԿՐՈՐԴ

# SYNTAX — ՀԱՄԱՁԱՅՆՈՒԹԻՒՆ

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

Note: Syntax (= arrangement) treats of the relation of words and forms to one another and teaches the correct way of expressing thoughts. The unit of expression is the Sentence, with its distinct Subject and Predicate.

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

#### THE SENTENCE - WOULS

453. A Sentence may contain:

a) a Statement: *A fu ly dung* the horse runs.

b) a Question: apr 4mgt does the horse run?

c) an Exclamation: h'usemu mpmy up dungt shu how fast [the horse does run!

d) a Command, an Exhortation, or an Entreaty: Jung' run! Ha'n dungt let him run!

ALL Kirt

SUBJECT AND PREDICATE — ԵՆԹԱԿԱՑ ԵՒ ՍՏՈՐՈԳԵԼԻ

454. Every Sentence consists of a Subject (Linform lymp) and a Predicate (umnpnų Ejf).

**455.** The Subject of a Sentence is the person or thing spoken of. The Predicate is that which is said of the Subject. In apr lyr Jung - Shu is the Subject, 4p Jung the Predicate.

Subject - bup-uhuj

456. The Subject of a Sentence is usually a Noun or a Pronoun or some words or groups of words used as a Noun. The Case of the Subject is Nominative.

457. In Armenian the Pronoun Subject may be ommitted being implied in the termination of the Verb (184).

Спр Sшрри вотедии New Year approached (Noun Subj.) (பீட் பே e) போடா ம் ம் e we agree (Pron. Subj.) suur ξμ suppung t to rest is necessary (Verb Subj.)

## Predicate — Ստորոգելի

**458.** The Predicate of a Sentence may be a Verb (as  $h_{ll}$   $d_{ll} q_{ll}$  he runs) or it may consist of some form of  $h_{ll}$ ,  $p_{ll} p_{ll}$  to be;  $h_{ln} \epsilon_{nc} h_{l}$  to be called;  $\delta_{mb} \epsilon_{gnc} h_{l}$  to be known;  $q_{mn} \delta_{ml}$  to become;  $\delta_{hcm} \delta_{ml}$  to disguise one's self;  $\delta_{ml} \delta_{mn} \rho_{l} h_{l}$  to be considered; — and a Noun or Adjective which describes or defines the Subject. Such a Noun or Adjective is called a Predicate Noun or a Predicate Adjective, and the Verb is called the Copula (the connective)

(ես) փերեղակ եմ	l am a huckster [Great
Տիդրան Ա․ կը կոչուի Մեծ	Tigranes the First is called the
Ս․ (= Սուրբ) Գրիգոր կը Ճանչցուի Հայերու Առաջեալ	Holy Gregory is known as the Apostle of Armenians
Մ․ (= Մովսէս) Խորենացին կը ձեւանայ Հինգերորդ դարու Հեզինակ	<i>M.Xorenaci</i> disguises himself as an author of the fifth century, A. D.
ան կը Համարուի Հայերու	he is considered the greatest

ան կը Համարուի Հայերու մեծագոյն պատմագիրը

Agreement of the Verb with its Subject

**459.** A Verb is said to agree with its Subject when it is required by usage to be in the same Number and Person.

460. A Verb agrees with its Subject in Number and Person:

historian of Armenians

(ta) mtany	l saw
(մենջ) տեսանջ	we saw
Թագաւորը մեռաւ	the king died
մարդիկը ուրախացան	the men were glad

461. The Verb of two or more Singular Subjects must be Plural: *դատաւորն ու խորհրդականը ծանր պաչա*օն ունին the judge and the counselor have a hard task

*Sայրս ու մայրս զիս կը փնտունն* **my father and mother are looking after me.** 

# Predicate — Ստորոգելի

458. The Predicate of a Sentence may be a Verb (as  $h_{ll}$   $d_{ll} d_{ll}$  he runs) or it may consist of some form of hd,  $p_{ll} u_{ll}$  to be;  $h_{ln \leq n \leq l_{l}}$  to be called;  $\delta_{ml} \delta_{gn} h_{l}$  to be known;  $q_{mn} h_{ll}$  to be;  $\delta_{ln \leq n \leq l_{l}}$  to disguise one's self;  $\delta_{ml} d_{mn} h_{l}$  to be considered; — and a Noun or Adjective which describes or defines the Subject. Such a Noun or Adjective is called a Predicate Noun or a Predicate Adjective, and the Verb is called the Copula (the connective)

(ես) փերեզակ եմ	l am a huckster [Great
Տիգրան Ա․ կը կոչուի Մեծ	Tigranes the First is called the
Ս․ (= Սուրը) Գրիգոր կը Տանչցուի Հայերու Առաջեալ	Holy Gregory is known as the Apostle of Armenians
Մ․ (= Մովսէս) Խորենացին կը ձեւանայ Հինդերորդ դարու Հեղինակ	<i>M.Xorenaci</i> disguises himself as an author of the fifth century, A. D.
ան կը Համարուի Հայերու մեծագոյն պատմագիրը	he is considered the greatest historian of Armenians

Agreement of the Verb with its Subject

**459.** A Verb is said to agree with its Subject when it is required by usage to be in the same Number and Person.

460. A Verb agrees with its Subject in Number and Person:

(ես) տեսայ	l saw
(մենք) տեսանք	we saw
Թաղաւորը մեռաւ	the king died
մարդիկը ուրախացան	the men were glad

461. The Verb of two or more Singular Subjects must be Plural: *quantum of an fung of the fung of the function of the functio* 

<sup>ζ</sup>*ωյըս ու մայըս զիս կը փնտուեն*, my father and mother are looking after me.

**462.** A Collective Noun takes a Verb in the Singular; but the Plural is also used when individuals composing the Collective Noun are thought of:

**463.** A Subject Plural in form, but Singular in meaning takes a Verb in Singular:

Միացեալ Նահանգները հզօր	The United States is a power-
ՀասարակապետուԹիւն է	ful Republic

**464.** When the Subjects are different Persons, the Verb is usually in the First Person rather than the Second, and in the Second rather than the Third:

ես ու դու միասին կը քայենք	you and I walk fogether
ես ու եղբայրս կը գործենք	my brother and I work
դուն եւ անոր քոյրը յաջող	you and his sister are succes-
5e .	full
դուն, Մուչեղն ու Վարդան	you, Mušer and Vardan went
որսի դացիք	hunting

465. A Verb having a Relative Pronoun as Subject takes the Person of the expressed or implied antecedent:

ես որ եկայ	l who came
դուք որ սպաննեցիք	you who killed
անոնը որ կռուեցան	they who fought

**466.** After Numerals the Verb is in Singular or Plural according to the Noun (see **111–113**) qualified by the Number.

## CONSTRUCTION OF CASES

#### Use and Meaning

**467.** The Cases of Nouns express their relations to other words in the Sentence.

## NOMINATIVE CASE — በՒՂՂԱԿԱՆ

**468.** The Nominative is the Case of the Subject of 1) Transitive 2) Intransitive 3) Passive 4) Impersonal 5) Copulative Verbs

- 1. Տիգրան գրաւեց Անտիոքը Tigran conquered Antioch
- 2. Supercump 4'nepulumump the rich man rejoiced
- 3. Jusannuhuun spurchpurchgur the merchant was invited
- 4. 4'muapher it rains
- 5. Sugpu Sunfumques & my father is President

Predicate and Attribute — Ստորոգելի եւ Վերադիր

**469.** A Noun or an Adjective describing or defining the Subject is called a Predicate Noun or Predicate Adjective if it is connected with the Copula hd', or a few other Passive Verbs  $(\mu n \mu h_{l}, \mu_{l} n \mu_{l})$  to be called;  $\mu n \mu h_{l}$  to be thought;  $\lambda m \mu \eta n \mu_{l}$  to be known, recognized as;  $\eta n \mu h_{l}$  to be appointed;  $\mu m n \mu_{l}$  to be elected; etc.).

**470.** The Case of a Predicate Noun or Adjective is the Nominative and does not agree in number with the Subject if it has no Attributes.

471. An Attributive Noun or Adjective qualifies a Noun without a connecting Copula.

Sundpurch pp dumbrane he hupbare for the roads are thought to be dangerous.

qhunchpp pullthe soldier is brave (Predicate Adjective)pullqhunchppthe brave soldier (Attributive Adjective)Quillqhunchppthe brave soldier (Attributive Adjective)Quillqhunchppthe brave soldier (Attributive Adjective)Quillqhunchppthe brave soldier (Attributive Adjective)Quillthe pullTimiškes was made Emporer (Pred. Noun)Quillthe pullThe Emporer Zimiškes (Attrib. Noun)

**472.** The Predicate Noun, qualified by an Attributive Adjective or Noun agrees in number with the Subject. In English, the Predicate Noun agrees in number even when it has no Attributes.

- Manupul Le Upzul Ephne Augurenpulp 5 fin Xosrov and Aršak were two kings
- ILquing Le Mului Benning usununn aftimmentulen flu Adoné and Xalat'yané were famous scholars
- մեր նախահայրերը մեր աղդին դիւցաղներն են our ancestors were heroes of our nation
- **b**  $h \in U$ ,  $\beta$   $m_{\mu} = m_{\mu} = \beta h$  X, and A. were kings
- IL . L. W. Hummen Efin A. and N. were scholars

**473.** The Predicate Adjective does not agree in number with the Subject.

- many are born poor, but die rich
- *φωμωίω*, *ωίοβφ*, *δωμω*, *π β*μμ we did flee, hungry, thirsty and naked
- Jep mange Sulfum quight Ephinuumpa, mach Ehmin δEp: ΠερήχτιΕρ quight mangy, Ec Em ampδint hun ac fuEq our boys went to the front young, came home old; others went healthy and came back lame and crippled.

#### Apposition — Բացայայտիչ

474. The Subject-Noun may have another Noun describing, defining, qualifying it like an Attributive Adjective; it is called an

Appositive-purgurgurger its Noun and does not agree with it, remaining allways Nominative Singular without Article:

Արածանի դետր	the river Arażani
Մասիս լեռնէն	from the mountain Masis
Արտաչատ քաղաքով	with the town Artašat
ղինուոր Հայեր	Soldier Armenians

Nominative with Adjectives

**475.** Nouns indicating Measure, Weight are put in the Nominative:

վաթյուն կանդուն բարձր արձան մը a statue sixty cubits high

źnpu umpųmžmų funpniuų dnuh up uξg in a pit deep of four men's size

ջառասուն մղոն Հեռուէն from a distance of fourty miles. ինրսուն աստիճան տաջութիւնով with ninety degrees heat

Nominative as Vocative — 4nչшկшն

**476.** The Modern Armenian has lost the Vocative as the Case of Direct address (65 g). It is now always the same as the Nominative except that in the Vocative the word is stressed on the first syllable.

Nom.	որդեակ	my son
Voc.	ո՛րդեակ	my son!
Nom.	Հայրիկը	the father
Voc.	4ml jp þ4	father!
Nom.	Մարիամ	Mary
Voc.	Մա՛րիամ	Mary!

#### GENITIVE CASE — ՍԵՌԱԿԱՆ

477. The Genitive is regularly used to express the relation of one Noun to another. It is a complement of a Noun, never of a Verb. Hence it is called the Adjective Case, whereas the Dative, Ablative and Instrumental may be called Adverbial Cases. **478.** The Genitive denotes the person or thing to which an object, quality, or action belongs by origin, work or by another way.

479. Being like an Attributive Adjective, the Genitive can be substituted by an Adjective formed with the stem of the Noun and a suffix  $(-m_f h_h, -m_f m_h)$  and others):

Gen.		Ádj.	
Աստուծոյ	of God	աստուածային	divine
երկնքի	of Heaven	երկնային	heavenly
แกมโม	of (a) house	ոնային	domestic
Թագաւորի	of a king	Թագաւորական	royal
Sudpep	of a shepherd	Հովուական	pastoral

Note: Final -he becomes -ne- in derivations: Phe number- Presultation numeral.

Place of the Word in Genitive

480. The Genitive precedes the Noun which belongs to it and is limited by it:

ծառի	տերեւ	leaf of a tree
ծառի	տերեւներ	leaves of a tree
ծառի	տերեւով	with a leaf of a tree

**481.** The Genitive may follow the Noun in some classic expressions:

Փրկիչն աչխարհի	the Saviour of the world
ՍրբուԹիւն Սրբոց	the Holy of Holies
Որդի Աստուծոյ	Son of God
Մայր Աստուծոյ	Mother of God
Տէր Տէրանց	Lord of Lords
Պատմութիւն Հայոց	History of Armenians

# Genitive and Definite Article

482. If the qualifying Genitive has the Definite Article, the Noun takes it also:

մօրը խրատր	the advice of the father
թուչունին բոյնը	the nest of the bird
Wrong: Sopp Jupum	

**483.** When the qualifying Genitive has the Definite Article, the qualified Noun cannot have the Indefinite Article  $\mathcal{L}_{\underline{L}}$  — but must have  $\mathcal{L}_{\underline{L}}$  before and the Definite Article affixed:

Wrong: տանը անկիւն մը Right: տանը մէկ անկիւնը a corner of the house

**484.** When the qualifying Genitive has neither the Definite nor the Indefinite Article, the qualified Noun may or may not have the Definite Article, according to the meaning:

թաղաւորի Հրաման order of a king թաղաւորի Հրաման մը an order of a king

485. When the qualifying Genitive has the Indefinite Article, the qualified Noun takes either the Definite Article or no Article at all, according to the meaning:

umuhip f up δ h n p f u u u f g there is a hand of a traitor in it umuhip f u δ h n p f u u f g there is the hand of a traitor in it

Use of the Genitive with Nouns

**486.** Subjective Genitive expresses the relation which would be expressed by the Subject of a Verb:

**Uninetary upper** the love of God (God loves) **Example for an energy (and the energy of the energy of the energy (the energy and the energy of the energy of** 

**487.** The Objective Genitive expresses the relation which would e expressed by the object of a Verb:

**Umarkonj ugap** the love of God (we love God) [enemy) **Egund** future fear of the enemy (some one fears the

**488.** Genitive of Material may denote that of which a thing consists or is made:

պղնձի կանժսայ a boiler made of brass հրկանժի դուռ a door made of iron

**489.** Possessive Genitive denotes the person or thing to which an object, quality, feeling or action belongs:

Upmyh zneuben the dogs of Ara Unezenh emgnesheun the courage of Mušer Ampnyph (Apnyepenhauh) Summunubaesheun Proieresis' eloquence

**490.** Genitive of Origin is used to denote the Geographical or Genealogical source of a thing or person:

Երեւանի խաղողը grapes of Eriwan Աչտարակի դինին the wine of Aštarak Մամիկոնեան տունը the House of Mamikon

**491.** Partitive Genitive denotes the Whole to which the Part belongs:

ղինուորներու մէկ մասը	a part of (the) soldiers
նարինջին Հատը	a piece of orange
Հաւկիթին երկվեցեակը	a dozen of eggs

**492.** Genitive of Quality is used to denote a high degree of Quality:

டிரால் பியாடி man of deed மலாழி பியாயுக்கா master of speech

493. Genitive of Superiority and Inferiority may denote the Superlative degree of an Adjective used as Noun:

լաւերուն լաւր	the best (litterally: the good [one] of the best)
վատերուն վատը	the worst, the lowest (litterally: the bad of all bad ones)

495. Genitive can be used to denote Measure, Degrees and Age: hphp dundnews Sundpung a journey of three hours inpu opnews 4np& a job for four days Հարիւր աստիճանի տաջուներւն a temperature of a hundred...degrees

*μ*ρμης μιθυηςμίε βμίθης με a baby of two month *μ*ρμης μιθυηςμίε ματικά με an orphan five years of age

## Genitive with Particles

496. Genitive is used with Particles (Postpositions). See 431, 432, 433.

# DATIVE CASE — SPU4Ut

497. The Dative can be used with Verbs, Adjectives, Particles.

**498.** Strictly, it denotes the Indirect Object of Transitive Verbs, but in Armenian some Transitive Verbs are constructed with the Dative.

**499.** Originally the Dative was a Locative with the primary meaning of "to or towards". This meaning is still surviving.

**500.** The Object expressed by the Dative is one not as caused by an action, but as affected by it and sharing in the action or receiving it consciously or actively. Hence expressions denoting persons or things with personal attributes are more likely to be in the Dative than those denoting mere things.

Dative as Indirect Object of Transitive Verbs

**501.** The Dative of the Indirect Object and the Accusative of the Direct Object are used with Transitive Verbs if their meaning allows:

etqh qhpe dp hnc mud I give you a book

զինուորներուն կը պատմէր իւր ջաջադործու թիւնները he was telling (to) the soldiers his exploits

Supper Shun multer funumuyur queuhfu the father promised five dollars to his child

ըսէ' ինծի պայմանդ tell me your term Հարցո'ւր անոնց սա մէկ բանը ask them this one thing

502. Many Verbs which in English take the Accusative of Direct Object, take in Armenian the Dative.

Such are the Verbs signifying: praying, favoring, helping, pleasing, trusting, believing, conquering, commanding, obeying, serving, resisting, envying, threatening, pardoning, sparing;  $mqm_2k_1$ ,  $oqbk_1$ ,  $buqmumk_1$ ,  $4mmbh_1$ ,  $4mmmbh_1$ ,  $5mmmbh_1$ ,  $5mmbhh_1$ ,  $5mbhh_1$ ,  $5mbh_1$ 

Հայերը յաղ Թեցին Պար Թեւներուն The Armenians defeated the Parthians

**Ε**βξ Յոյները οη ίξ μ ζωμεριτά, Πωρυμίδερο εξή μρίωρ μαηβει if the Greeks had helped the Armenians, the Persians could not have been victorious

- awaiting the teachers
- (But oqune of her [acc.] 41 mait for help)
- 2nnd mjmghuhpe support mhph Zmjhpni the Romans could not subdue the Armenians
- կը Հետեւիմ ջայլերուդ, բայց չեմ Հնադանդիր օրէնջիդ I follow your steps, but I do not obey your laws
- mpmmenum he Sunmyt mteheneu, emgy uhe perum he Suhumuhh ne h'eunghumum munug he serves his masters in the exterior, but interiorly he resists them
- enje geng he umbudike, beremje bereve dus he umunum sister envies sister, brother threatens brother with death
- 4p Հաւատամ խօսքերուղ, բայց ցաւերուս չեմ կրնար Համբերել 1 believe your words, but cannot endure my pains

## Dative with Intransitives

**503.** Intransitive Verbs signifying motion or emotion take the Dative of Indirect Object:

կը մօտենանը դղեակին we are approaching the castle

<sup>11</sup>Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

անօթիներուն Հաց ղրկեցէ՛ը send bread to the hungry ասորս կ՝ուղղեմ օտարներուն I adress the foreigners մի՛ երթար անծանօթ մարդու do not go to an unknown person

կը գեսմ երիտասարդունեանդ I pity your youth ողորմէ՝ մեզի have mercy on us աղմա՛ աղէտներուն pity the ignorant

Ethical Dative and Dative of Reference

**504.** The Dative is used to show a certain interest felt by the person indicated. It is called Ethical Dative, Dative of Reference or of Interest. It is used with some Impersonals also (**365**, **663**).

шаш евар ашрир пицр here hundret gold coins for you цпий евар циньи yo do it to yourself (you harm yourself) щитри пи щирошие у рибр Дир традпир, рида шбоб у шаубили Дир фиципит your title is an honor to me, but your flight is a shame for all of us

#### Dative of Purpose

505. The Dative is used to denote Purpose of an action. Cf. the Future Participle (252).

oqunc demu inc demghu they hurried to help qnpde [nc 4] ep demu e we go to work pubulp men pumpey he chose a site for camp inn quiplifie unsurf for retreat

Dative of Price, Measure, Time and Age

**506.** The Verbs denoting selling, buying, measuring have the words for Price, Measure, Time, Age as Indirect Object in the Dative. It is different from the use mentioned **495**, where the Genitive is attributively related to another Noun.

տասը սենտի չեմ գներ	I won't buy (it) for ten cents
Հինդ տալերի կը ծախեմ	I'm selling it for five dollars
Հարիշրին Հինդ չահ	five percent interest

emuh<sup>®</sup> mmpnumu fe how old are you? emuh mmpnumu denmu he died twenty years old dund μ deghu h'mpduum l'm waking up at six kodu nu hfuhu muber he doors are opened at seven thirty

մարտին կը սկսին աչխատիլ they begin to work in March կէս դիչերին տուն եկաւ he came home at midnight ժամանակին Հասար you arrived on time

Note: The words  $d_{\mu\nu}d_{\mu} d_{\mu}d_{\nu} h_{\nu} h_{\nu}d_{\nu} h_{\nu} h_$ 

#### Dative with Adjective

**507.** The Dative is used with Adjectives or Adverbs to denote that to which the given quality is directed, for which it exists, towards which it tends.

պատիւի արժանի worthy of honor մանուկներու միսասակար harmfull for children մարմինի օգտակար usefull for the body փառջի ծարաւի thirsty for glory

508. The following Adjectives and Adverbs govern the Dative: pupliful, friendly purl or purliful, enough *fiziand f* hostile, inimical *fumpoin* desirous, needy *fify* close — and the compounds with *fify* (*upfiimlify* blood-related, *sumuluifify* of the same age) *sumumul* opponent, against *susary* agreeable; *ubsursary* disagreeable *sumplimenp* necessary *sumump* equal; *ubsurmump* unequal *sum* possible; *ubsurmump* unequal *sum* peculiar *jumnif* peculiar *jumnif* pit; *ubsurptup* unfit ນາມາ like; ມານັ້ນການ unlike ມາມາຊາມລ decent; ມານມາມາຊາມລ indecent The Adjectives ending in -ມາ [h, -ມ [h ມາມຊາມ] h, ອາມນິຊາມ [h desirable ມາມຊາມ] horrible, ນະມາຍງ h permissible

Note: Adjectives requiring the Dative, take the Possessive Genitive when they are used as Nouns.

բարեկամ է մեզի he is friendly to us մեր բարեկամն է he is our friend Թչնամի է ձեղի he is hostile to you ձեր Թչնամին է he is your enemy

Dative with Particles

509. See 428, 429, 430, 431 Note.

#### ACCUSATIVE CASE — 20380406

**510.** The Accusative is the Case of the Direct Object. It denotes that which is directly affected or that which is caused or produced by the action of the Transitive Verb.

**511.** In Modern Armenian the Accusative is like the Nominative in form. In exceptional instances and in Pronouns the Accusative prefix q- of the Classic Armenian is used.

Nom.: U.p.mu.zum lange munchyme. Artashat has been destructed

Acc.: U.pmuzuun ling&mulighu they destructed Artashat

Nom.: *Sound fu ou Sunch your numplic* the son has been blessed by the father

Acc.: Supp opSuby nppfu the father blessed the son

**512.** Accusative and Nominative having the same form, the Direct Object of a Transitive Verb becomes Subject when the Transitive Verb is changed into the Passive. But the Pronouns with a special form for the Accusative must be changed from the Accusative into the Nominative and vice versa.

ես կը վարձատրուիմ դիս կը վարձատրեն	(passive) I am rewarded (transitive) they reward me
ղձեղ կը դովեն դուջ կը դովուիջ	they praise you you are praised

Two Accusatives

**513.** Some Transitive Verbs take a second Accusative in addition to their Direct Object. The second Accusative is the Predicate of the Direct Object.

514. The Verbs taking a Predicate Accusative are:

put to call, munumult to name, pumpt to choose, put to appoint, hupt to take for, to think, tuffunpt to suppose, etc.

515. The Predicate Accusative never takes the Definite Article. It can be a Noun as well as an Adjective.

appling it pl daimtghig we put them to flight naked

**516.** In changing from the Active Voice into the Passive, the Predicate Accusative becomes Predicate Nominative (see **469**).

Accusative with Intransitive Verbs

**517.** Intransitive Verbs often take as Object the Accusative of a Noun of the Verb stem or of a Noun with a kindred meaning (Accus. of interior Object).

யையுயர்வடி முக்கழ் மீற மீய்யுறுற் he lives a safe life தயாழ்வகியியில் இவாம் முற இய்யியது he sleeps the eternal sleep வீக்ற விறியிகறு மோ விற வா கிற வுயாயியிகறு மீவருயிழ we bewail our crimes and mourn your children

we bewan our crines and mourn your crines யாடுடப் புர ஓரமைடு he sweats blood காபியா வியியர ஓயரிர to walk a long way

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

# Accusative of Time, Measure, Weight

**518.** Time "when, or within which, or how long", Measure, and Weight are expressed by the Accusative.

a) երեք տարի ապրեցաւ he lived three years շարաներ Հինդ օր կ'աչիսատինք we work five days a week բսանուչորս ժամ դիմացան մարդիկ the men sustained (the fight) twenty four hours

மையமாடிரும் விற்ப மயுயைக்குற் I waited fifteen months b) கற்பாட பிராம் வியிசயு உயர்கழிய் we walked two miles தாறு பியிராடம் புராயட சும்க்குற் I bought four yards of linen c) பிக்கு புற்றாற தயையா வியாகதியில் we contrived six lbs. of sugar

#### Accusative of Place

**519.** The Place "to which" (end of motion) and the Place "where" (rest in) are expressed by the Accusative.

a) տուն երթալ	to go home
քաղաք մտնել	to enter the city
ծով իյնալ	to fall into the sea
պարտէց իջնել	to go to the garden
եկեղեցի երթայ	to go to church
Հայաստան փոխադրուիլ	to move to Armenia
b) Բոստոն բնակիլ	to stay in Boston
անապատները դեգերիլ	to wander in the desert
Երեւան ապրիլ	to live in Erivan

Note: The Classic Armenian used k+Dative for the Place "where" (rest in) and k+Accusative for the Place "to which" (Motion). This is the Locative which has been replaced by the simple Accusative in Modern Armenian. Cf. 506, Note.

## Accusative of Specification

**520.** The Accusative is used to denote the part affected. This construction is called Accusative of Specification.

գլուխը գլխարկ մը	a hat on
பீட்டீறா டிலாழ	a belt round the waist
կուրծըը ծաղիկ	a flower on the breast

ծեп.еп ипср	a sword in the hand
աչքը ակնոց	glasses on the eyes
գրպանը գրամ	money in the pocket

**521.** To the same construction belong idiomatic expressions like:

.

ձեռ.ք ձղել   ձեռ.ք բերել	to acquire
តំព្រ និងទំរង់ត្រ	to mount a horse
կառը նստիլ	to ride a car
ձեռը առնել	to assume
ոտը ելլել	to stand up
գլուխ հանել	to accomplish
գլուխ ելլել	to be through
վորիս տալ	to lend
փոխ առնել	to borrow

Note: The Classic Armenian used the Locative for all the idioms in 520, 521.

## ABLATIVE CASE — PUBUPUUU

**522.** The relation "from" is expressed by the Ablative Case; it includes Separation, Source, Material, Cause, Agent, Quality and Comparison.

#### Ablative of Separation

**523.** Verbs signifying Separation or Privation are followed by the Ablative. Such are the Verbs meaning to remove, to set free, to be absent, to deprive:

արկածէն պրծայ	I escaped from the disaster, accident
բանտէն փախան	they flew from the prison
աչքերէն զրկեց ինք	y he deprived himself of his eyes
մահէն աղատեցանը	we were acquitted of death,
	we escaped from death
ղալոոցէն բացակայիլ	to be absent from school
որոմը բաժնել ցորեն	if to separate the weeds from the wheat
անէն մեկնիլ	to leave home

Numérisé par CDMF (PP) - 2010

Հայրենիքէն հեռանալ	to remove from the fatherland
պաչաօնէ հրաժարիլ	to resign from office, employment
վտանգէ ղզուչանալ	to avoid danger
խաղալէ դադրիլ	to cease playing
հաղէ ջուրէ կարուած	deprived of bread and water

Ablative of Source, Origin and Material

**524.** The Ablative is used to denote the Source from which anything is derived, or the Material of which it consists:

a) Source

Եփրատ եւ Արաջս Հայաստանի լեռներէն կը բղիփն, կը ծաղին, կը սկսին

Euphrates and Araxes rise, originate, start from the mountains of Armenia

խանութեն առի եւ ոչ թե պարտեղեն

I took it from the store and not from the garden

Stand & Lund & myn fuon pr this word has come from you

b) Material:

سابه ساله الحجامa silver-watchالم الحجامa silver-watchالم الحجامa stone-buildingالم الحجامa silk dressالم الحجامa clay pot

Note: This Ablative is equivalent to an Adjective and may be changed to one by the suffixes  $-k_{II}/k_{I}$ ,  $-k_{uJ}$ , -h:

ջարէ = ջարեղէն արծաԹէ = արծաԹի, արծաԹեայ, արծաԹեղէն փայտէ = փայտեղէն, փայտեայ

c) Origin:

Հայկէն ծնած, սերած born, generated from Haik ապարապետը եղաւ Արծրունի տումքն

the generalissimo was made from the house of Arzruni

infam phimpine by a chosen from a poor family

Ablative of Cause with Intransitive Verbs

**525.** The Motive which influences the mind of the person acting and the object exciting the emotion or setting forth the effect are expressed by the Ablative Case. The Verbs are regulary Intransitive.

վախէն դողալ, դեղնիլ to t	remble, to become pale from fear
դազաններէ վախնալ	to fear beasts
ուսումէ ձանձրանալ	to get tired of study
ուրախուԹենէ պարել	to dance out of joy
տիսրուԹենէ լալ	to cry with grief
անօթութենէ մեռնիլ	to die of hunger
ծարաւէ տառապիլ	to suffer from thirst
ցուէ Թմըիլ	to fall asleep by pain
կը գուանանը քեզմէ, բար	ութենէդ
we thank you, we thank y	ou for your kindness
զարմանքէն քարանալ	to be petrified with amazement
կարդալէ կոյրնալ	to become blind of reading
պաղէն սառիլ	to freeze with cold

Ablative of Agent with Passive Verbs

**526.** The Agent after a Passiv Verb is expressed by the Ablative; it contains the Subject of a transitive construction. The Subject of the Passive Verb corresponds to the Direct Object (Accusative) of the transitive construction; cf. **512.** 

ոծրադործը դատապարտուեցաւ ատեանէն

the criminal was condamned by the court

Հայաստան գրաւուեցաւ Արմեններէն

- AND - CANANA CANANA

Hayastan was conquered by the Armenians

Հայերու աւանդական պատմութիւնը դրուած է Մով– սէս Խորենացիէ

the traditional history of Armenians has been written by *Movses* Xorenaci

Հայ բազմաԹիւ վարժարաններ Հիննուած են ՄիսիԹա– րեաններէն

many Armenian schools have been founded by the Maxit'arists

# Հայաստան կ'ոռողուի չորս մեծ դետերէ Armenia is watered by four great rivers

**527.** In case of equivocation, the transitive construction is preferable. The Sentence Upmuzum Zuytepti union transmission may mean:

a) Artashat has been taken from the Armenians (by the Romans)

b) Artashat has been taken by the Armenians (from the Romans)

a) is Ablative of Separation, b) is Ablative of Agent. There is no equivocation in the transitive construction of the same Sentence:

# Հայերն առին Արտաչատ Հռոմայեցիներէն

the Armenians took Artashat from the Romans Հռոմայեցիները առին Արտաչատ Հայերէն

the Romans took Artashat from the Armenians

The Ablative of Separation does not change, whereas the Ablative of Agent of the possive construction becomes the Subject (Nominative Case) of the transitive construction.

# Ablative of Duration

**528.** The Ablative is used to denote Duration of Time:

ԶուաըԹնոց տամարը չինուեցաւ իբր ջսան տարիէն

the Church Zwart'noc was built within about twenty years ¿որս ժամէն կ'աշարտեմ դործս I'll be through in four hours վայրկեանէ մը կը Հասնի he will arrive in a minute մանկունենէ Հիշանդ է he has been sick since childhood

529. In Classic Armenian, the Ablative has the Proposition l'. It appears in some expressions still used:

h suf from birth; h uhquuit from the beginning

ի յառաջագունէ (Modern: յառաջուընէ, յառաջուց) previously, beforehand; ի բնէ by nature

530. Note the difference:

# երեը օրուան մէջ երեը անդամ անձրեւեց

it rained three times in three days

The Postpositive  $\mathscr{A}$  with the Genitive is used to express the duration of the indicated Time.

#### Ablative of Specification

531. The parts of the body are put in the Ablative of Specification in order to attribute to the person a certain quality:

խելքին ԹեԹեւ	foolish
ուռըէն արադ	fast
աչ քես տկար	short sighted
ծեռքէն ճարտար,	wynnuh adroit

Note: These qualities are referred to the person, not to the parts of the body. The Adjectives  $\mathcal{P}^{L}\mathcal{P}^{L}\mathcal{P}$ ,  $\omega_{\Gamma}\omega_{\mathcal{P}}$ ,  $\omega_{\mu}\omega_{\mu}$ ,  $\omega_{\mu$ 

#### Ablative with Adjectives

532. Adjectives meaning Separation (corresponding to the Verbs of Separation, cf. 523) take the Ablative:

emqmet stann far from the town sunpset quept deprived of grace step μmpomotic zum mmpptp very different from what you think sopult quequint (quequinely, muomuod) secretly from the father, without father's knowing.

## Ablative of Comparison Cf. 101–104

533. a) The Ablative of Comparison is a branch of the Ablative of Separation. The object with which some thing is compared is the starting point from which it is reckoned. Thus:

Uncpp Umswy ąfmnch gp S. Sahak was a scholar, (but, starting from him) Umswyfh (mchch) ąfmnch gp U. Umsmng Maštoč was more scholarly than Sahak

մեզմէ (աւելի) երջանիկ happier than we աղջատէն (աւելի) դժբանա unhappier than the poor մարդէն (աւելի) դգօն more prudent than man

b) The Comparative Particle *welfe* can be suppressed, but the Adjective after the Ablative will be still in the Comparative degree:

մեզմէ երջանիկ happier than we աղջատէն դժբանտ unhappier than the poor մարդէն դգօն more prudent than man

534. a) The Ablative of Comparison may be replaced by  $p_{\mu}$  than + Accusative:

աւելի երջանիկ ջան զմեղ (մենջ) աւելի դժբախտ ջան աղջատը աւելի զգօն ջան մարդը

b) The construction with  $\mu u u (\beta \xi)$  must be used when Adjectives or Adverbs are compared:

#### Partitive Ablative

535. The Ablative is used to denote the Whole of which a part is taken. It is used:

a) With Nouns and Pronouns: 4 filium pund fu dun dp part of the funds d h qu'f n z np (nz d f 4 u) no one of us munug f nd mup some of them

b) With Cardinal Numbers: *Համբորդներէն երկուջը* two of the passengers *Հատերէն մէկը* one out of the many

c) With Adjectives:

**ημεμβύեρξύ կρωμέρ** (*μ***β***g*) the youngest (the oldest) of the children

المان الم المان الم المان الم المان الم

**536.** The Ablative alone denotes the Whole of which something is taken:

μίνιμξη ζρωσησιρ offer some of your wine ζωημητική μιματηρία give us some of your bread δωημητική μωρητική μερικά μερι μερικά μερικά μερι μαρικά μερικά μερικά με μερικρι μα μαρικά με με

Ablative with Particles

537. See 426 b, 434.

#### INSTRUMENTAL CASE — ԳՈՐԾԻԱԿԱՆ

**538.** The Instrumental Case denotes Means, Instrument and Manner; Cause and Origin; Time and Space. It is equivalent to an Attributive Adjective in some instances, to an Adverb in others.

**539.** The Means or Instrument of an action is expressed by the Instrumental Case for which the Prepositions with, by, through, in, are used in English:

- נהחגבשיני קלעבחל, בהחגעקבחל, בקחגעקעברים, חב עוזעי הון שלחשעברים they fought with arms, fists, fingernails, and even teeth
- hen <u>yuiugnil</u> ulumnil filing inplug inpositionist by his effort he saved the empire from ruin
- யும் சியாகிறாற கிகா வாழிய மாழியாக் கிமீ I have set (planted) these trees with my own hand

ղանակով կարել to cut with a knife կառքով մամբորդել to travel by car

540. The Armenian Preposition corresponding to the English with is *4 Em*. It is never used to denote Means or Instrument; it merely denotes Accompaniement, an exterior contact.

Distinguish carefully:

hungerd Epfen to go by car 4mm. ehu sem enforme to walk beside the car furged wind for to speak through an interpreter թարդմանին Հետ աստիլ to speak with the interpreter Subprof functions amilton star we fought against wolves with dogs

վութաջան աչակերտը գրչով կը գրէ, ծոյլը՝ գրչին Հետ he ligent pupil writes with the pen, the lazy one plays with the pen

541. The Manner of an action, may it be exterior or interior, physical or spiritual, is denoted by the Instrumental:

mpmqnefilemd p Smume he arrived with speed այս կերպով, ճամբով, եղանակով in this way, manner ծուլու թեամբ դործ չի կատարուիր nothing is done through laziness

ՀարստուԹեամբ կործանեցաւ, իմաստուԹեամբ ոտջի he was ruined by wealth, restored through wisdom

542. Specifications denoting that in respect to which or in accordance with which anything is or is done, may be expressed by the Instrumental:

առաջինութեամբ գերազանց excellent in virtue

isty nungend yung lame in one foot

wuntund dwng, wugg ng gngond man in name, but not in fact

իմ կարծիքովս, իմ տեսու թեամբս in my opinion

upund dum, phar for whom he a coward in his heart, unbearable in his character

543. The Instrumental denotes Cause (interior, logical), Origin, Country, and Profession — in some kind of specification:

whowsdwhend he unknowly unsubmenent the finite is created by the infinite

mumamnnd he smuhgarh menheber by the cause, the effect is understood

աղդով Հայ, կրօնով բրիստոնեայ, արուեստով ձկնորս,

176

Sugrhuhend Uhuhgh Armenian by nation, Christian by religion, fisherman by profession, from Ani by birthplace

544. Indefinite Extent of Time and Space, also Historical Periods are expressed by the Instrumental:

ophpni umunhyfup we waited for days manufuhpni 4 franting sick many weeks manufuhpni nr numbpni for years and centuries qhanfu hphmyunrfhamup manung a highway along the river muu puntonrfhamup omn a tree as high as a house Shqpmu Uhoh opni at the time of Tigranes the Great qhehmi memunhi to work at night ghuhum for sleep in the daytime

545. Unlike the Partitive Ablative, the Instrumental denotes the Whole:

infund integral the whole family depend dufund old and young inclup fetpund genepund the whole house in gene infund all possessions and animals

546. Akin to this Instrumental are the Adverbs with the suffix -m/h:

ungundfi with the whole nation unundfi with the whole family hpundndfi with the whole flock

547. The Instrumental is equivalent to Adjectives of exterior or interior qualities with the suffixes  $-m_{Lnp}$ , -hbp, -mgp: dhg  $m_{mnn} \leq mbnd$  uhbhml a room with six windows =  $m_{mnn} \leq mbnd$   $m_{lp}$  $\leq hbq$   $m_{lmm} pml pml nd$  hlp q hp q h a church with five towers =  $m_{lmm} pml pml q h l q$ 

12

548. From this Instrumental are derived the Adjectives *qh*und drunk; *n\_d-nd* strong; *4udnd* tasty; *hub\_op* smart.

549. Adjectives of filling, abounding and the like require the Instrumental. Abundance may be material, moral, or spiritual:

ηρωθηί [h(μεμπε)full of moneyζωμηί [ναιρηί]ζωμημηfull with bread and waterημηπι [θεωθ μζωμημηproud of his learningμωγαι [θεωθ μδιωθωι μfamous with his courage

550. There are no Prepositions or Postpositions in Modern Armenian governing the Instrumental Case. Some classic forms are used: 4munkpå munklede with the family; munknog under the stars.

551. The Nouns in the Instrumental Case used as Post-positions, see 433.

## USE OF THE DEFINITE ARTICLE - በቦበሪኮ2 ፀዐጉ

552. The Definite Article  $-\mu$ ,  $-\omega$  (see 47-50, 94) marks its Substantive as known. Any word used as Substantive may have the Definite Article: making the house,  $\frac{1}{2}m_{ep}h_{lp}$  the little one,  $\frac{1}{2}h_{ep}h_{lp}$  the five,  $m_{lp}h_{lp}$  (the) living,  $\frac{1}{2}h_{ep}h_{lp}$  that what is inside,  $m_{lp}h_{lp}$  the yes and no.

553. The Definite Article must be attached to the Noun (Proper or Common) when it is preceded

a) by a Demonstrative or Possessive Adjective:

*այս մարդ*ը this man *մեր բարեկամ*ը our friend

b) by a qualifying Genitive (see 482-485):

*Տրդատի Հայաստա*նը the Armenia of Tiridat *Հայերու ծադում*ը the origin of Armenians *Արտաւաղդի առասպել*ը the legend of Artavazd

178

**554.** Proper Names in the Accusative (Object) may take the Definite Article in order to be distinguished from the Nominative (Subject):

Lupmqnum wugue behpump dfy numnednd Varazdat passed over Euphrat with one jump

Արչակ սպաննել տուաւ Գնէլը Aršak had Gonel killed

555. The Ablative of Proper Nouns is regularly given the Definite Article:

**Նախարարները Արչակէն ապստամբեցան** the Notables revolted against Aršak

**Պոմպէսս Տիգրանէն չատ մեծ պումար պահանջեց** Pompeus asked too much money from Tigranes

Omission of the Definite Article

556. The Predicate Noun does not take the Definite Article: *Uncpp Uminforghing fumperlyun* Saint Sahak was elected Katholikos (Archbishop)

Պապը Թագաւոր Հռչակեցին Յոյները the Greeks proclaimed Pap as King

557. The Appositive preceding the Noun is without the Definite Article:

Անի մայրաջաղաջը but Մայրաջաղաջ Անին (553 c) the Capital Ani

**558.** With Proper Names the Definite Article is omitted, unless they are in the Accusative (554), the Ablative (555), or they are qualified:

Աստուած God, but Մեր Աստուածը Our God Երեւան Erivan, but Հայերու Երեւանը Erivan of the Armenians

**β**μυπευ *Κ*ρβυσημυ Jesus Christ *μω επευιδ β*μυπευρ the crucified Jesus *μωρπεημω Κ*ρβυσημορ the arisen Christ

**559.** In the numbers  $\underline{Lo}[\underline{\partial}\underline{\mu}, n\underline{\mu}]$ ,  $\underline{\mu}[\underline{\partial}\underline{\mu}, \underline{\mu}]$ ,  $\underline{muup}$  — their last vowel  $\mu$  ( $\underline{\nu}$ ) takes the place of the Article.

560. With the words denoting time the Definite Article is omitted against 553 a:

այս չաբախ this week այդ օր that day այս տարի this year այն ամառ that summer

**561.** Historic Titles which are considered as parts of the Proper Names do not take the Definite Article unless they precede the Proper Names in classic form:

Տիդրան Մեծ Խոսրով Կոտակ	Tigranes the Great Xosrov the Kotak
առարող գոտապ Աչոտ ԵրկաԹ	Ašot the Iron
Classic form:	
Մեծն Տիգրան	Tigranes the Great
<i>Կարմիր</i> ն Վ <i>արդա</i> ն	Vardan the Martyr
Սուրբն Ներսէս	Nerses the Saint

562. The word  $\mathcal{J}_{\mu\nu}$  man, does not take the Article when used as Indefinite Pronoun:

մարդ կը սոսկայ one trembles but մարդը կը սոսկայ the man trembles

563. The Parts are enumareted without Article: *Summp unsulfu*, *qinchi Ephipapa*, *fg munp* volume first, chapter two, page ten *Suppu hp punhusung Sanght ne Suputhut* man is composed of soul and body

564. The Omission of the Definite Article with the Genitive Case see 484.

180

USE OF THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE — ԱՆՈՐՈՇ 80ት

565. The Indefinite Article  $(\mathcal{A}_{\underline{\mu}}, \mathcal{A}', \mathcal{A}_{\underline{\mu}}\hat{\nu})$  see 51—53) follows the Noun closely. If the Noun is followed by an Adjective, the Indefinite Article stays between the Noun and Adjective:  $\mathcal{A}_{\underline{\mu}}\mathcal{A}_{\underline{\mu}\mathcal{A}_{\underline{\mu}}\mathcal{A}_{\underline{\mu}}\mathcal{A}_{\underline{\mu}}\mathcal{A}_{\underline{\mu}}\mathcal$ 

ղեղեցիկ տեսարան մը or տեսարան մը դեղեցիկ a beautiful view. - scene

a beautiful view, - scene

566. The Indefinite Article may be given to Plural Nouns in order to emphasize their indefinite character:

րաներ or բաներ մր	things
աօսքեր or խօսքեր մր	words
ծայներ or ծայներ մը	voices

567. The Indefinite Article is optional with Predicate Nouns: *qhuncap had* or *qhuncap den had* I am a soldier *hep shenn or hep shenn de sudementad f* 

he is famous as a hero

մեծ բաղմու Թիւն or մեծ բաղմու Թիւն մը կար there was a big crowd

568. The Adjectives and Adverbs denoting Measure and Quantity take the Indefinite Article:

ழித் மீழ சுடிப்டி some wine ஓயப்டு மீற கோசுடு some persons பயா மீற மீயாரடிடு many people யரம்தயபுடி மீற so far யரம்புதோ மீற so

**569.** The Indefinite Article is used with Adjectives (405), the Instrumental Case of Abstract Nouns, and the Infinitive of Verbs — to change them to Adverbs:

ாடா பீற முறையும் the fled quickly வலையிரடிகுகியிற பிற புறைகியழ்க்குவட he attacked with vehe-டி பிற மிலைக்குவட he spoke with stress [mence]

#### USE OF ADJECTIVES

**570.** Adjectives precede the Noun which they qualify and are not declined. A single Adjective may qualify one or more Nouns One Noun may be qualified by one or more Adjectives:

eml emn emghühen nr ghünrnpühen the brave citizens and soldiers

*wunz μ*. *ζμ*.*βμη щип*.*ηuμηη* the sweet and juicy fruits

571. Adjective may follow the Noun:

a) in Classic Form,

b) in Poetic and Rhetorical Style,

c) when the qualification is composed of several Adjectives. a)

Shapub Bpypnpy, Uusuy Պարթեւ, Ներսէս Շնորհայի Tigranes the Second, Sahak the Parthian, Nerses the Graceful

b)

C)

պալատին մէջ մարմար in the palace built of marble մեծ դըրան գով արգունի near the royal Great Door

ind in dup in a dus up for a candle slim and pale like death

572. Attributive Adjectives do not take Articles.

573. Adjectives may be used as Adverbs with (see 402) or without (see 401) the Indefinite Article.

574. Adjectives when repeated denote the Superlative and have the qualified Noun in Plural:

մեծ մեծ քաղաքներ	very large towns
անուչ անուջ խօսքեր	very sweet words
սեւ սեւ աչքեր	very dark eyes
Հին Հին դարեր	very old times

575. Adjectives can govern the Dative (508), Ablative (532) and Instrumental (549).

#### USE OF NUMERALS

**576.** Numeral Adjectives precede the Noun and are not declined with it. The Noun remains Singular if it is indefinite. It must be put in the Plural if it is qualified or determined (see 111-113).

182

577. The Noun determined by Numerals above one has the Verb in Plural; the Verb may be Singular if the Noun is put in Singular (see 111–113):

երկու ջաջ ղինուորները Հասան the two brave soldiers arrived երկու դինուոր եկաւ (or եկան) two soldiers came

578. Cardinal Numbers may take the Definite Article, be declined, and used as Substantives (110). Above one, their Verb must be Plural:

if le the one, belance the two, belance the three, sapue the four if le thing - sapue quight the one remained, the four went.

**579.** Ordinal Numbers regularly precede the Noun. They may follow the Noun in classic form:

առաջին Հատոր or Հատոր առաջին

**580.** Ordinals used as Attributive Adjectives are not declined. When they take the Definite Article they are declined as Nouns (see **98**, **116**):

առաջին Հատորին	sto	in the first volume
առաջինին մէջ		in the first one

581. Cardinal Numbers are used to denote dates:

Հաղար չորս Թուականին in the year one-thousand and four Հաղար իննՀարիւր քառասունուեօԹը տարին

the year ninehundred and forty seven Bulling off the first of January Phunpulup day February six

582. Ordinals are used when the words day, week, month are added:

unduntum ununghu opp the first day of the month hpuppnpn zweufop the second week inppnpn undhup the fourth month

583. The substantive forms of the Cardinal Numbers are used to denote hours.

*ժամը մէկի*ն one o'clock *ժամը մէկուկէսի*ն one thirty

ժամը երկուջին two o'clock ժամը երկուջը ջառորդ անցած quarter past two ժամը երեջին տասը քնացած ten minutes before three

USE OF PRONOUNS AND PRONOMINAL ARTICLES

584. The Subject Pronouns are not expressed with Verbs (184, 457) except for Distinction or Emphasis:

- կը Հաւանիմ եթե պայմաններս ընդունիս l agree if you accept my conditions
- teu inunchguy, hul nuc zustegup I was the loser, but you were the winner

585. The Possessive Adjectives *ful*, *pric*, *hp*, etc. cannot be used without the corresponding Particles attached to the Noun:

իմ դիրջս, ջու անունդ, իր տունը, մեր, ձեր, անոնց Հայրենիջը (126–128).

**586.** The Possessive Particles can be used without the Possessive Adjectives which often are omitted for Vividness of Expression:

The Pronouns blf \_ hpblf \_ Ul \_ wlinlif

587. In order to avoid ambiguity,  $\mu_{\nu,\rho}$ ,  $\mu_{\Gamma}$  ( $\mu_{\nu,\Gamma}$ ) are used for the main Subject,  $\mu_{\nu}$ ,  $\mu_{\nu,\mu}$  for a Third Person:

տեսաւ Հեռուէն իւր (իր) եղբայրն եւ անոր որդին

he saw from afar his (own) son and his (the brother's) son

ζωμερη ωδοδη (¶ωρυβίδεροι) μου εερξύ επιζωίερβύ πρ βρέδε (ζωμερη) ήμουδη β δξεξίδ The Armenians guessed from their (the Persians') words that they themselves, (the Armenians) were in danger.

184

## Use of the Relative Pronoun np

588. The Relative Pronoun  $n_{l'}$  indicates a relation between its own Clause and some part of speech, called its Antecedent:

589. The Relative Pronoun follows the Antecedent and precedes the Verb of the Relative Clause:

յուսահատ վերադարձան պատդամաւորները, որոնջ մեկնած էին յուսալից the messengers who had left hopeful, returned hopeless

**590.** In the Nominative and Accusative, the Singular np may stand for the Plural npule, qupule:

այն մարդիկ որ (որոնջ) վրայ Հասան, առանց զէնջի էին those men who arrived were without weapons

*որսական էին չները որ (ղորոնը) տեսար* the dogs which saw were hounds

**591.**  $n_{l'}$  agrees with its Antecedent in Number and with the Verb and the Postpositions of the Relative Clause in Case:

the minor died, for whom the mother was sacrificed

մարդիկ որոնց առենը բնակեցայ the people in whose house I lived

*unque npnug ζung unch* the children to whom I gave bread δυηγύեρυ πρηθιgif βρωμία μωρήτε υπωιgung my parents from whom I received only good things

աչակերտներս որոնցմով Հպարտ եմ my pupils of whom k am proud

**592.** When the Antecedent is a Sentence, the Relative Pronoun is in Singular:

#### annobegh ulum ulum nnnug Sundun ulum dar by I made mistakes for which I was punished

But: *uhum [ulen 4.npdlegh, npnlu 4.mdmp (npnd) mmmdnlegm* 1 was punished tor having made mistakes

Note: The result of this use of  $n_{P}n_{I}$  is its meaning "therefore", as Conjunction.

185

## Order of Pronouns in a Sentence

593. The order of the different Pronouns and Adjectives when used together is:

1. The Possessive. 2. the Demonstrative. 3. the Indefinite. 4. the Numeral. 5. the Attributive Adjective. 6. the Noun:

άեր այդ բոլոր 4 ինդ աննչան βηβերը all those five insignificant papers of yours



# SYNTAX OF THE VERB

**594.** The Syntax of the Verb relates chiefly to the use of the Moods (which express the manner in which the action is conceived) and the Tenses (which express the time of the action). The uses of Mood and Tense frequently cross each other.

# MOODS — ԵՂԱՆԱԿ

#### INDICATIVE MOOD — ยนิยัติเป็นเห็น อาแบน

595. The Indicative is the Mood of direct assertions or questions:

տարին ունի չորս եղանակ in a year there are four seasons դարնան՝ կը ծաղկին ծառերը in spring the trees blossom աչնան՝ կը խափին տերեւները in autumn the leaves fall կը սերտէ° ք Թէ կը խաղաջ do you study or play?

#### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD — บรถคนานบนนน ธานบนน

596. The Subjunctive in general expresses the verbal idea with some modification such as an Exhortation or a Command, a Concession or a Wish, a Question or a Doubt, a Possibility (contingency), or a Condition.

Hortatory Subjunctive

**597.** The Hortatory Subjunctive (Present) is used in the First and Third Person Singular and Plural to express an exhortation or a command. The Negative (Prohibitive) Particle is not d'h' but j-; it can be prefixed to the Second Person also. The Hortatory is regularly preceded by the Conjunction  $\beta_{n\eta}$ , which expresses concession also:

դինաթափ ընենը թչնամին let us disarm the foe! խոյս տան չուայտութենէ, սիրեն դգաստութիւնը let them shun excess and cherish modesty Fing you's intrifield let them come and see Թող չըլլայ հարուստ, Թող ըլլայ պարկեչտ never mind if he is not rich, if only he be honest

numo fing uf u fong pijug let it be as you say

Note: *spinpup* do not go (Imperative) ¿teperan do not go (Subjunctive)

598. A negative question in the Subjunctive is equivalent to an exhortation:

staffun°u why don't you go? sfuous h° μ why didn't you speak?

Note: The Subjunctive Imperfect stands here for the Indicative Aorist: husner spoulgup.

599. Of two Verbs in the Subjunctive, only the first takes the particle *s*-:

stepfdum flumm (for: sifumn) do not go and stay there أرسان المسلم (for: المسلم) that he might not fall and faint and it in for ful

# Optative

609. The Subjunctive is used as Optative to express a Wish; it is often preceded by the Particles  $n' \mu \xi \mu \beta \xi$ ,  $h \mu \omega \mu \gamma (\beta \xi)$ , hgh'... The Present Tense denotes the wish as possible, the Imperfect as unaccomplished in Present Time, the Pluperfect as unaccomplished in Past Time. The negative is y-:

alentif salenutist may be die rather than sin ողջ մնաը — բարով երթաը Stay well! Fare well! Uumneme split (Classic: Stp ah' mpungt) God forbid! may God avert this omen [come]

(hgh' L) hepwihh' quarter I wish he comes (it is possible that he (hgh' L) hepwihh' quarter I wish he came (he did not, but he may still)

(hyh') Eputh' Equit [I wish he had come (he did and [he will not]

(hgh'L) n'Lp fp fdf qpmd <u>spillmjh</u> mju umunulp I wish I had not written this letter (but I did).

## Questions in Subjuctive (cf. 598)

601. The Subjunctive is used in questions implying:

Doubt, Indignation, or an Impossibility. The negative is  $\xi$ -. The Question mark may alternate with Exclamation point:

ի՞նչ ընենք սա մարդը, ի՞նչ արժանի պատիժ գտնենք

what are we to do with this man? what fit penalty can we *Summen neputini's*, *Surphipen summer's* [devise? to renounce my faith, to betray my country!

առաջարկը ընդունի՞մ — աղատութիւնս զոհե՞մ

to accept your proposal - should I sacrifice my freedom!

## Potential Subjunctive

**602.** The Subjunctive is Potential when used with  $\beta + \beta + \mu + \mu + \mu$  (perhaps), to suggest an action as possible or conceivable. But with  $\beta + \mu + \mu + \mu$  the Indicative is also common:

[θեρեιμ (μρ) ζωργύξε μ<sup>ο</sup>ύξ ξ ωμι ωηθητίμο perhaps you may ask what's all about (what is this noise)?

perhaps not come if he guesses that he'll be punished.

## Conditional Subjunctive

603. The Subjunctive is used to express Conditions. A complete Conditional Sentence consists of two Clauses.

604. The Clause containing the Condition (the Dependent Clause), is regularly introduced by the Conditional Particles E[J],  $I_{PP}$ ,  $I_{PP}$ ,

**605.** The Clause containing the Conclusion (the Main Clause) has the Verb in the Indicative or Conditional (Imperfect Future).

**606.** The use of Moods in the Dependent Clause is very loose in Armenian. It depends upon the view of the speaker who may consider the Condition as a pure possibility and use the Subjunctive, or as more than possible, almost as a fact, and prefer the Indicative.

- Subj. Eff neght ablieft, it is likely they will) to lieve, we shall not hinder them.
- Ind. *toff linequin a the line line is* almost a fact, they are already lieving)
- Subj. *L[d], u[n], u[onul, u[onul, u], u[onul, u], u[n], u[u], u[u*
- Ind. *Lot upptp qhu*... (the speaker is convinced of the friend's love, and cannot understand his short coming).

IMPERATIVE MOOD — ՀՐԱՄԱՑԱԿԱՆ

**607.** The Imperative Mood is used for Commands and Entreaties:

- Sn'q mmpf & 2hqh, mm 2mmmuhyf' & 2hp mmmhup, mm-Shyf' & 2hp Smump take care of yourselves, defend your honor, preserve your faith!
- jujunut' punphhu'u, hunghpan sundunpanh state my friend, your opinion frankly!
- q-npδ-ligf'e, u'h' fuoufe work, do not speak!

**608.** The Imperative of  $\lim_{p \to \infty} h_{p}$  followed by the Conjunction  $n_{p}$  ( $\lim_{p \to \infty} h_{p}$ ,  $\lim_{p \to \infty} h_{p} + h_{p}$ ) and the Subjunctive of the Verb is used instead of the Imperative, especially in colloquial language:

նայէ որ ժամանակին դաս see that you come on time նայեցէը որ չՀիւանդանար see that you do not get sick

Other substitutes for Imperative see 597.

**609.** The Infinitive is properly a Noun denoting the action of the Verb abstractly. It differs, however, from other Abstract Nouns in the following points:

a) it admits the distinction of Tense:

b) it is modified by Adverbs, not by Adjectives;

- c) it governs the same Case as the finite Verb;
- d) it denotes Purpose and Cause, specially in the Dativ Case;

e) it can be used as an Adjective.

#### Infinitive as Noun

**610.** The Infinitive can be used like a Noun as Subject, Direct and Indirect Object, with or without the Article:

- Nom. Subj: hup phup Substant lunc put f it is a fine thing to know one's self
- Acc. Dir. Obj.: <u>Jujt Lt lp</u> *d'* f' *Suduply* <u>tp</u> <u>subply</u> <u>plun</u> do not believe that to enjoy is to be happy

Genitive: unpilling dudubuli ungur the time to learn is over

Dative: [dy [dwphp fu yw [nch lp wy wuhd l wait for the coming of the mailman

Ablative: Juouh 15 Jung Ling Ling he is tired of speaking

Instrum.: spundugh\_init\_umintegue, sumptionstrum.: spundugh\_init\_umintegue, sumptionstrum.
he lived commanding, he died obeying.

#### Infinitive as Verb

611. The Infinitive as Verb is Complemental to finite Verbs.

Infinitive with Impersonal Verbs

612. The Complementary Infinitive is used with Impersonal Verbs and Expressions, such as μμωτρωά ξ, μωμεί ξ, ζωμί ξ, ματοβ ξ etc.

պատչան է նկատի առնել it is becoming to consider

Հարկ է մեռնիլ	it is necessary to die
ամօթ է ետ քաշուիլ	it is a shame to withdraw
վայել է լռել	it is proper to be silent

Infinitive as Complement of Verbs

**614.** Verbs which imply another action of the same Subject to complete their meaning take the Infinitive.

Such are Verbs denoting to be able, dare, undertake, remember, forget, be accustomed, begin, continue, cease, hesitate, learn, know how, fear, and the like. The Infinitive with these Verbs can be in the Accusative (= Nominative) or Dative.

## Infinitive in Accusative

615. The Verbs *night, lipumi, glumumi, & linguli* take the Infinitive in the Accusative:

այս կ'ուզեմ ըսել, ընել this I want to say, to do կընամ հաստատել I can affirm [to speak գիտեմ կռուիլ, գիտեմ խօսիլ I know how to fight, and how պիս չմանչնալ ձեւացուց he made as if he did not know me

Note 1. Avoid the vulgar forms: *they up about the for they up about L* i could not see.

Note 2.  $h'' = q^{h} d' = p p^{h} h u$  with Subjunctive clause because the action is not of the same Subject - I want you to do...

## Infinitive in Dativ

616. The Verbs *Innium*, *funfulum*, *mi fum*, *gminit* take the Infinitive in the Dative Case:

if any put in I forgot to tell

யித்துயட கழக்பற்ப சுளத்துயட he was ashamed to praise him to his face

*μը φωχπιμά պարտաը յիչեցնելու* I hesitate to remind him of his debt

192

617. The Verbs uluk, sud up & ulp, jub qub l, um hup l take the Infinitive in Dative if they follow, in Accusative if they precede the Infinitive:

ղրելու սկսաւ or սկսաւ գրել	}	he began to write
չեն համարձակիր բողոջել or բողոջելու չեն համարձակիր	}	they do not dare to protest
կը յանդգնի՞ս մերժել or մերժելու կը յանդգնի՞ս	}	you dare to refuse?
ատիպուեցայ Հաւանիլ or Հաւանելու ստիպուեցայ	}	I was forced to yield

Infinitive of Cause

618. The Dative of the Infinitive is used with *ncpulumumi*, *snpmd fil*, *puplumumi*, *mjumjlfil* and the like to denote the cause of those emotions:

- *տրտմեցայ զջեղ Հոն չդտնելուս* I was sad for not finding you there
- ளடாய மயதயர ஓட்டிற் யரம மயுயயாம் மும்பிராடம் I was glad for having given you this help
- *In puphubung hout incu, h'un might interneu* he gets angry because I speak, he gets upset because I remain silent

## Infinitive of Purpose

619. The Dative of the Infinitive denotes Purpose with Verbs of motion and with Adjectives governing the Dative (507, 508): hpdmhp mhuhlme let us go to see

flymbe melphine we did not come to ruin

upp putper ummpmum the we are ready to do that

վարժ (սովոր) են յաղ[ժուելու the are used to being conquered յօժա<sup>°</sup>ր ես ինծի Հետեւելու are you willing to follow me?

**620.** It is very common to use  $\leq uuf up$  with the Infinitive Dative to denote Purpose or Cause. But the Postposition can be omitted without obscuring the meaning:

klub hu qehq mhuuhine (ζuulup) I have come to see you qhu uhphineu (ζuulup) μρ ζuulphpf he is patient with me because he loves me

#### Infinitive as Adjective

621. The Dative of the Infinitive used with a Substantive qualifies it like an Adjective:

ուտելու Հաց	eatable bread
խմելու ջուր	drinkable water (drinking water)
տեսնելու բան	something worth seeing
ծուկ բռնելու գործիք	fishing device (instrument)
լեռ ելլելու ուղի	a way leading to the mountains

**622.** This Infinitive 1) remains always in the Singular, 2) does not take the Article, and 3) regularly precedes the Substantive.

#### Infinitive in Ablative

623. The Verbs which govern the Ablative Case (521) take the Infinitive also in Ablative. Such are *quapple*, *jaqubel*, *subsquabul*, *ud sum*, *quapple*, *gu znch* etc.

*ημημեցμι μείμματειξ* he ceased to work

Inguly huby be I am tired of standing

կը ճանճրանանը երդելէ we are getting tired of singing

h'und shund nepult (or nepulat, 616) they are ashamed of begging

կը վախնար սնանկանալէ he was afraid of being bankrupt կը բաչուին պարելէ (or պարելու, 616) they shy from dancing

Infinitive in Instrumental

624. The Instrumental of the Infinitive expresses the cause, the motive of another action:

menule ind immunity - the puzze is a saw the danger, I retreated - or seeing the danger...

*εμωμեύωμη μωμβեι υωμπεμ η.ωμδωμ* as I was unable to conquer, I was made slave — or being unable...

## T E N S E S - duuuuuu

625. The number of possible Tenses is very great. A scheme of thirty or more Tenses might be devised. But no language finds occasion for more than a small part of these. The most obvious distinctions in Armenian are given 173-174. The use of those Tenses will be studied in 626-648.

# TEŃSES OF THE INDICATIVE PRESENT — ՆԵՐԿԱՅ

626. The Present Tense denotes an action or state:

- 1) as now taking place, or existing, and so
- 2) as incomplete in present time, or

3) as indefinite, referring to no particular time, denoting a general truth:

4μ ζωυήνων, 4μ στούξε, τι στομωρύ 4μ μπξε you understand it, you see it, and yet you are silent

աթոռս քեզի կու տամ ու ես կը Հեռանամ

I give you my seat and I go away

# ՀողուքորԹուԹիւնը բարեկամ կը վաստկի, ճչմարտու– Թիւնը՝ Թշնամի

flattery gains friends, truth, enemies

627. The Present is regulary used in quoting writers whose works are extant:

Բուզանդ կը պատմէ Buzant narrates Խորենացիի քով այսպէս կը In Xorenaci's History, Haik speak խօսի Հայկ thus.

#### Historical Present

**628.** Ind. Present is used for the Aorist (Historical Perfect) in lively narrative or in a summary enumeration of past events:

լուրը կը տարածուի, պատգամաւորը կը Հասնի, կը դիմէ դէպի արջունիջ, կը ներկայանայ Տիդրանի, եւ այսպէս կը խօսի

the news is spread, the legate arrives, heads for the royal palace, presents himself to Tigranes, and speaks thus

Արչակաւան կը մեծնայ, բազմուԹիւնը կ՝աձի, ոձիրները կը սաստկանան, դժգոհուԹիւն կը տիրէ ամբողջ երկրին

Aršakavan grows, the crowds become bigger, crimes multiply, discontent spreads all over the country.

## Present for Future

**629.** Ind. Present may take the place of the Future to express certainty:

رساسط لرئيستا الماستانية soon, you will be married الماسو لو المالية we shall arrive tomorrow, and leave the day after

u shall arrive tomorrow, and leave the day after μ'οη μιμ° μ μιδ μ will you help me?

#### Present for Imperative

**630.** In colloquial language, Ind. Present is used for the Imperative, when the execution of the command is certain:

կ՝երխաս Հրապարակ, Հարցափորձ կ՝ընես, ու կը բերես մանրամասն տեղեկուխիւն

go to the square, inquire about what happened, and bring detailed information.

# IMPERFECT — ԱՆԿԱՏԱՐ

**631.** Ind. Imperfect denotes an action or a state as continued or repeated, hence incomplete, in past time. It is a descriptive Tense, it describes conditions, habits, customs, even actions conceived in progress, unlike the Aorist which presents an action or a state as absolutely completed at a definite time in the past (**636**):

mjumfu h'mmmfp Cmphhmgh — h'mnoffp h funnng upmh so lived (habitually) Narekaći: he prayed from the bottom of his heart

- *μը վախնային Տիդրանի առջեւ ելլելու* they were afraid to appear before Tigran (the Imperfect describes the state)
- But <u>*dulugula*</u>, <u>*ungling*</u> <u>*thula*</u> they feared, they did not appear) before him (the Aorist merely states the accomplished fact
- <sup>θ</sup> μη μ η δ ξ μ, μπ μ μ μ μμη ξ μ he used to put on his crown, to girdle his sword.
   <sup>(10)</sup>
   <sup>10</sup>
   <sup>1</sup>

(Habits, customs described by Imp.)

- But *[Imp] ppmL*, *unpp fpmlby* he put on... he girdled (Aorist relates the facts)
- ophpnd unmar h'hulth, marku hp dauhth, zarhug h'hp-Fugh day after day I used to arise, close my house, go to the market (= habits)
- *wjn opp kiwj*, *nnnp hwhkgh*, *znihwj nwgh* that day, I arose, closed the door, went to the market (= facts)

Note: The English is less exact in distinguishing these two modes of statement.

## Imperfect for Present

632. Ind. Imperfect may be used instead of the Present for statements in polite form:

- *μը բաղձայի որ այս բօԹը չտարածէի*ք I wish you would not spread this sad news
- *μը խύդրէի որ միչդ ժամանակին դասի դայի*ջ I ask you to come to lessons on time
- կը կարծէի Թէ իրաւունը չունիք I would think you're wrong

**633.** Instead of Interrogative Present or the Imperative, the Imperfect of the Subjunctive is used in asking some favor:

for zunpse h'nutse, mu ontun hus h hn de huse will you do me a favor and explain this rule to me?

or zunpse upte, wy optuen hush uthubyte do me a favor...

**634.** The Aorist denotes an action completed in the presence of the narrator. It corresponds to the English Preterite:

*Elunc, fuonEgunc, lancEgunc, uppmanlEgunc al SERugunc* he came, spoke, fought, was defeated, and went away (The narrator was there)

երէկ Ճամբայ ելաւ he left yesterday (I saw him leaving) երէկ Ճամբայ ելած է he has left yesterday (I have been told ...)

**635.** The Aorist is the Historical Tense of Armenian. It presents actions (periods) as having taken place at a definite point of past time and as being absolutely completed (631).

Shapmu Ubd Summumby Zuy huyupac Philip, puyy mbume ume ume une happy happy une Tigranes the Great founded the Armenian Empire, but he also witnessed its fall

*U*[υμθωμ queby πε quanty (μούμ τε ωηφή φωηωψωμύτην, μη ωχωμτρωύτης χωματώωμτην στο φημομ Μχit'ar refined and distinguished the ideas of Religion and Nation; his disciples continued his great work.

## 

636. The Future denotes an action or state that will occur hereafter. The Particle  $u_{l}$  is not repeated before two or more Verbs: it stands before the first only.

պիտի երթաս տեսնես you will go and see պիտի յափչտակչ, սպաննչ ու ջանդչ he will rob, kill, and destroy.

637. The Future may have the force of an Imperative:

umunmen uhmh dampe'u, mum for ne ontheh hu nhuter pay your debt, or else l appeal to the law

upun unndh'u quuq, Eldt zeu negen upundenehe learn your lesson, if you do not want to be punished.

**638.** The Future Perfect denotes an action as completed in future time. Armenian like English is not exact in distinguishing

between mere future action and an action completed in the future. Hence the Simple Future is used instead of the Future Perfect:

երբ ան Հասնի ես պիտի վերջացնեմ գործս (for: վերջացուցած պիտի ըլլամ) when he arrives I shall finish (have finished) my work.

639. The Future Perfect is used to express opinion, guessing:

- *մինչեւ Հիմայ Հասած պիտի ըլլայ* he may have arrived by now
- zwm ημηθωημό μμμμ με may have been very mach surprised

# CONDITIONAL — ԹԷԱԿԱՆ

**640.** To Future belongs the Conditional as its Imperfect modality. It is used in the Main Clause of a Conditional Sentence. The First Conditional refers to present, the Second Conditional to past time. They are often substituted by Ind. Imperf. and Pluperfect. See **647**.

PERFECT AND PLUPERFECT — **BUPUAUSUP** by Appluausur

**641.** Armenian Ind. Perfect and Pluperfect correspond to the English:

a) The Perfect denotes an action as now completed:

կատարած եմ պարտքս, վարձս կը պահանջեմ

I have completed my task, I ask for my wages

חשש הל שוח השתר, הר הש להל שהעה I have spoken that word, and I do not take it back

b) The Pluperfect is used to denote an action or state completed in past time; or an action prior to another:

Հասանը այն տեղը, զոր մերինները դնած էին we have reached the place which our men had purchased յաղթուեցաւ, ղի ինք զինքը զօրաւոր կարծած էր

he has been defeated because he had thought himself strong.

**642.** The Auxiliary Verb is not repeated when two or more Verbs follow each other:

he has come and told the story

**643.** The Aorist is very often used instead of the Perfect, especially in colloquial language. But it should not be used for statements which the speaker ows to others. Do not say:  $\langle F_{up}\mu - \mu_{un} J_{u} d \mu f_{u} h_{u} J_{u} J_{u} d \mu f_{u} h_{u} J_{u} J_{$ 

## SEQUENCE OF TENSES

**644.** There are no rigid rules in Armenian for the Sequence of Tenses in Main and Dependent Clauses. It is preferable to put the Verb of the Dependent Clause in the Imperfect Subjunctive, when the Verb of the Main Clause is Imperfect, or Pluperfect; and to put the Dependent Verb in the Present Subjunctive when the Main Verb is Present, Perfect, or Future. But the Present Subjunctive can be always used. Aorist may be followed either by Present or Imperfect.

Imperfect:

mpeneett	
կ՝աղաչէի որ գային	I was asking them to come
աղաչած էի որ դային	I had asked them to come
աղաչեցի որ դային	I asked them to come
Present:	
կ՝աղաչեմ որ գան	I am asking them to come
աղաչած եմ որ դան	I have asked them to come
	I shall ask them to come
աղաչեցի որ դան	I asked them to come

# Sequence in Conditionals

**645.** The Sequence of Tenses should be observed with more exactitude in Sentences where the Main Clause depends upon a Condition expressed in the Dependent Clause (604-607).

**646.** If the Condition is doubtful but not contrary to fact, hence its falsity is not implied:

Ind. Present, Perfect, and Future are used in the Main Clause; Subj. Present or Future, in the Dependent Clause  $(I_{1} \not I_{2} \dots)$ . Present of Subjunctive may refer to Present and Future alike.

կ՝ապաքինի (պիտի ապա–	եԹէ քնանայ (պիտի քնա–
քինի)․․․	նայ)
he will rid of the sickness	if he falls asleep
<i>պիտի բժչկուին</i> ջ	<i>БЪЪ пьqѣи</i> (= щрипр пь-
we will be healed	qѣи) if you wish (will wish)
ирипсиод Бие	եթե լուսննայ
we are save	if it dawns

**647.** If the condition is contrary to fact, hence its falsity is implied:

Indicative Imperfect, Pluperfect, or Imperfect Future (= Con- ditional) are used in the Main Clause;

Subjunctive Imperfect or Pluperfect in the Dependent Clause: Imperfect referring to present, Pluperfect to past.

անոր խօսջերուն կը Հիա– եԹէ լսէիջ (լսած ըլլայիջ) նայիջ (պիտի Հիանա– յիջ)․․․

you would admire (have admired) his speech, if you (had) heard him

ես Հարստացած կ՝ըլլայի․․․ եԹէ դու Հարստանայիր (պիտի ըլլայի) (Հարստացած ըլլայիր)

I would be (have been) rich, if you were (had been) rich

648. When Aorist is used, it must be used in both Clauses: of the Conditional Sentence.

qhu dhpminphghp...hpyou did hurt me...if you did

եթե անոր միսասեցիր if you did harm him.

# PARTICIPLES — ԴԵՐԲԱՑ

#### PRESENT PARTICIPLE

**649.** The Present Participle is used as an Attributive or Predicate Adjective. It can take the Article and be used as a Noun also (257-263):

<u>unning affuning the p</u>fighting soldiers [fighters <u>inughubpe emg unning to</u> the mountaineers are brave <del>aungubpe unump</del> we expect our livele-hood from <u>mupning</u> buyers

**650.** The Present Participle as Verb is equivalent to a Relative Clause:

 $q_n p \delta_n q = (\omega b) n_p \mu_p q_n p \delta_f$  (he) who works

Note the difference between  $w_{J'}$  much (Genitive)  $2h^{2}m_{II}$  (Noun) the builder of this house, and  $w_{J'}$  marking (Accusative)  $2h^{2}m_{II}$  (Verb) (he) who is building (has built) this house.

English Present Part. compared with the Armenian

**651.** The use of the Present Participle is more extensive in English than in Armenian. In many instances the Armenian must make use of other forms and words in order to express the Engish Present Participle. The Exemples show the differences:

English Present Participle:

I am, was going a biting cold the fighting ones his taking a stroll

greeting, blessing reading writing a time for paying bills

202

by losing your situation instead of using his learning

I cannot help remarking I found him sitting

not with standing

concerning considering during excepting including according to... comparing to...

կորսնցնելով Ձեր դիրքը փոխանակ գործածելու իր գիտութիւնը ստիպուած եմ դիտել տալ գտայ զինքը [որ] նստած [5] (այսու ամենայնիւ), սա– կայն եւ այնպէս նկատմամ բ 🗉 նկատելով 🗤 · · · mmhh բացի (ի բաց առեալ) բաղառաբար · · · · Համաձայն Համեմատելով, Համեմա– տութեամբ

It appears, that the Armenian must use besides the Present Part, Past Participle, Infinitive (simple and declined), Substantives (abstract and concrete), Adverbs and Prepositions in order to express the English Present Participle.

## PERFECT PARTICIPLE

652. The Perfect Participle has three forms: -ωδ, -μ<sub>p</sub>, -μ<sub>w<sub>l</sub></sub> a) The Participle in -μ<sub>w<sub>l</sub></sub> is used in archaic forms only: *wughw<sub>lp</sub>* the past, *ζwugnughw<sub>lp</sub>* the deceased, *wughw<sub>lp</sub>* the past, *ζwugnughw<sub>lp</sub>* the deceased, *wughu<sub>lp</sub>* the deceased, *wughu<sub>lp</sub>* the risen Lord.

b) The Participle in  $-E_{l'}$  is used in compound Tenses (See **270, 643**). The Auxiliary Verb can be suppressed when the Participle precedes another Verb in the Indicative Present or Imperfect.

*μեցեր է կը նայի* he stands there looking or *μեցեր կը նայի* standing he looks

c) The Participle in  $-m\delta$  combines all the functions of a Verb, of an Adjective and of a Noun.

**653.** The Past Participle is used as a Verb in the compound Tenses of Perfect, Pluperfect and Future Perfect. The Perfect Participle as Verb represents the action as completed and can stand alone implying the Auxiliary Verb  $p_{III}m_{III}$ :

տասին քառորդ քնացած (ըլլալով) quarter of ten.

# Perfect Participle as Adjective

**654.** As an Attributive Adjective the Perfect Participle precedes the Noun it qualifies. As Predicate Adjective it is connected to the Subject by a Copulative Verb (see **469**).

յողնած մարդիկ tired men մարդիկը յողնած են (կը Թուին) the men are (seem) tired

**655.** The Perfect Participle as Adjective is equivalent to an Adverbial Clause of place, time and to a Relative Clause.

hջած տեղղ = ուր որ կ'իջնես where you descend արեւը չծաղած = երμ արեւը տակաւին չէ ծաղած before sunrise

յողնած մարդիկ = մարդիկ որոնը յողնած են tired men տեսած անտառս = անտառը զոր տեսայ the wood (which) have seen

**656.** The Personal Article  $(u, \eta, \lambda)$  should be added to the Noun, not to the Adjective.  $S \not= u \ m \ \delta \ u$  would be a Participle Noun (657) and could not stay before another Noun as Adjective. This mistake, however, has been favored by some modern writers.

### Perfect Participle as Noun

657. The Perfect Participles in -uδ become Nouns when they are given the Definite or Indefinite, or the Pronominal Articles: *βhnub μ βμ βμυμίυ ηξε βμ' μουμμ* do not speak ill of one deceased *ապօրէն վաստկուածը, ապօրէն կը ծախսուի* ill got, ill spent (things ill acquired are ill spent)

nihigund fun higur ghaft, höft ummundund fur sundundungin t mhumda (l'ill give) to you half of what I have if what you relate is in conformity with what you have seen.

**658.** The Perfect Participle as Noun is equivalent to an a) Subjective and Objective Clause:

b) Adverbial Clause of Measure:

μ<sub>μ</sub>δωghu εωψ = ω<sub>μ</sub>νεωψ η<sub>μ</sub>εωψ μ<sub>μ</sub>gω<sub>μ</sub> (μ<sub>μ</sub>νωψ) as much as I could — (can)

c) Adverbial Clause of Comparison:

ուղածիղ պէս = այնպէս ինչպէս կ'ուղես as you like.

#### FUTURE PARTICIPLE

**659.** The Future Participle in -LnL is a declined Infinitive and denotes

a) necessity, obligation, corresponding to the English 1 am to...;

b) represents an action as still to take place. It is used with the forms of L d in the Periphrastic Conjugation (360):

unpullent to I must learn unundentent to you must be punished

661. The Future Participle in  $-\mu_{\ell}$  is equivalent to a Subjective or Objective Clause:

ղնելիջս սուղ է what I am to buy is expensive ընելիջը կը դատապարտեմ I condemn what you will do.

205

**662.** Passive is used a) impersonally (**364**); in b) intransitive; c) reflexive (**335**), and d) reciprocal meaning (**331**):

- zum 4p fuounch, ghz 4p 4nponch they talk much, they work little
- யுப பீயாராடம் டீப்யடாராட்டு ம்டீப்பா ம்ரியாடயல் டீ the character of this man is changed
- sumperies, interpret, interpret, interpret, interpret, interpret, interpret, wash, wipe, comb yourself
- **interfunction of the set of the**

#### COMPLEMENT OF IMPERSONAL VERBS

**663.** Impersonal Verbs composed of a Noun or Adjective and the Auxiliary Verb  $\xi$  (365) may have a Dependent Clause either in Infinitive or in Subjunctive with the Conjunction  $n_{II}$ . The Subject, if there is one, stands in the Ethical Dative (504).

Հարկ է երթալ	one must go
Հարկ է ինճ երթայ	
Հարկ է որ երթամ	I must go
ի ղուր է վիճել	it's in vain to dispute
ի ղուր է ձեղ վիճել	it's in vain you dispute
ի զուր է որ կը վիճէք	it's in vain you dispute

**664.** When the Impersonal is composed of a Noun, the Auxiliary  $\xi$  can be suppressed, and the Noun alone be used like an exclamation. It may also have a Dependent Clause introduced by  $n_{P}$ :

# SYNTAX OF PARTICLES

#### THE NEGATIVE PARTICLE 112

665. The Adverb  $n_{\xi}$  can stand alone as the Negative of a whole Sentence:

 $\mathcal{L}_{uj} = \mathcal{L}_{uj} + \mathcal{L}$ 

**666.**  $\eta_{\xi}$  can be repeated before every word in negation except the Verb (341-348). The last  $n_{\xi}$  may preceded by a  $E_{L}$  or followed by an  $m_{L}$ , or both:

n' ξ եυ [եι] n' ξ [ω<sub>l</sub>] դուն կընանը Համբերել neither l nor you we can be patient n' ξ ζπυ [եι] n' ξ [ω<sub>l</sub>] ζπն կը տեսնուի ոζρωդործը neither here nor there the criminal is seen

667. In a Sentence with repeated  $n_{\xi}$ , the Verb does not take the Negative Particle  $\xi$ -, if it stands after; it does take, if it stands before the repeated  $n_{\xi}$ :

n' ¿ եր է կ n' չ шյиоր կ ր ց ш ј ң ш l could not come neither չ կ ր ց ш ј ң ш l n' չ եր է կ n' չ шјиор yesterday nor today

668. The Particle  $n_{\xi}$  can be prefixed by hyphen to a word to denote its opposite:

Հարուստ եւ ոչ–Հարուստ wealthy and not-wealthy գիտուն կամ ոչ–գիտուն scholar or not scholar

**669.** The Preposition  $df_{fu} \leq h_{L}$  (till, until, to) is used with the Dative Case if the Object is a Pronoun; it is used with the Accusative if the Object is a Substantive:

մինչեւ մեղի չհասաւ կրակը the fire did not advance up to us մինչեւ մեր տունը չհասաւ կրակը as far as our house

THE CONJUNCTIONS אָלייי אָשע, אַנ

671. The Copulative Conjunction  $\rho_{\xi'} \cdots \rho_{\xi'}$  must be repeated before every word to be joined. The last  $\rho_{\xi'}$  may be preceded by  $\mu_{L}$ , or followed by  $\mu_{I}$ , or both:

ואבין לשולשוף לי און איש האבין אין איש און איש

672. The Conjunctions  $l_{\mu\nu}d$ ,  $l_{L}$ , are put before the last of the words joined with  $l_{L}$  or disjoined with  $l_{\mu\nu}d$ , unless they are stressed before every one them:  $l_{\mu\nu}d \cdots l_{\mu\nu}d$ ,  $l_{L}\cdots l_{L}$  $(= l_{f}l_{f}'\cdots l_{f}l_{f}' 671) \cdot l_{\mu\nu}d$  may be preceded by a pleonastic  $l_{L}$ , or followed by a pleonastic  $m_{L}$ ,  $l_{f}l_{f}$  or both;  $\cdots l_{L}$  may be followed by a pleonastic  $l_{f}l_{f}$ ; both  $l_{\mu\nu}d$  and  $l_{L}$  may be replaced by  $l_{f}l_{f}$ :

չենք ըսեր կա՛մ մահ [եւ] կա՛մ [ալ, Թէ] ազատուԹիւն, այլ կ՚ըսենք ե՛ւ կեանք ե՛ւ [Թէ] ազատուԹիւն

we do not say: either death or freedom, we say rather: both life and freedom

2ωμερη, Պարβειύερη ει [βξ] Հռոմայեցիները միչտ կռուի մէջ էին Armenians, Parthians and Romans were always in war

unu εμίνε, μημημη, [Ε.] μων [[θξ] υμμπινω[με μημημε Εμιν μνεμξυ νωμε μημ, μηδ [θξ] μμροπ prayers, admonitions, or threats were in vain as well as hopes, desires and longings

*կեանըի պայմանները նոյն են Հոս [θէ՝ Հոն (Հոս կամ Հոն)* the living conditions are the same here or there.

#### The Conjunction nu

673. The Conjuntion  $n_L$  cannot be stressed  $(n'_L \cdots n'_L)$ in place of  $E_L$  (672). Between two words of which the second starts with  $n_L$ , the Conjunction  $n_L$  should be avoided; if it starts with another vowel, the Conjunction  $E_L$  should be preferred; if the first word ends and the second begins with a consonant, the Conjunction  $n_L$  should be used:

բարեկամ ու Թչնամի դոհ եղան friends and enemies were contented

- לחקף בר [avoid: חר] חרקבת נחקנ גבני soul and brain are not the same thing
- Արմ է նները ու [better: եւ] Արամացիները տարբեր ցեղեր են the Armenians and the Aramäer are different races.

674. When a Verb is repeated in order to express Intensity, Frequency, the Conjunction *m* must be used:

Ц'пстр пс Ц'пстр	he eats and eats
խմեց ու խմեց	he drank and drank
Цпс дшј пс Цпс дшј	he comes and comes

The Conjunctions pt, np

675. The Conjunctions [75, mp serve to introduce Quotations and Dependent Clauses:

nume [θξ [or: np] ummpmum ξ he said that he was ready ξημη [θξ [or: np] μμθμμ do not go, please!

676. The Dependent Clause of the Verbs  $\mu m \eta \delta m \ell$  to wish,  $\mu m \mu m m m \ell \ell \ell$  to get ready,  $m \ell \eta \ell \ell$  to want, and of all Verbs which may have an Infinitive as complement (614-617) may be introduced by  $m \rho$ , never by  $\beta \ell \xi$ :

կը բաղձայ որ բարեկամանայ քեզի հետ or

*μը μաղձայ μարեկամանալ ջեղի հետ* he wants to become your friend

ջանա' որ վերջացնես դործդ try to finish your work. ջանա' դործդ վերջացնել

677. A pleonastic [*θ* ξ (672) may be added to *μωθ*, *μπεg* ξ, *ζωημε*, *ωμμω*<sub>ε</sub><sup>ω</sup>:

uyuop huud (Fξ) dunp to day or tomorrow ηπιgξ (Fξ) եι πε huh ημη perhaps he will not even come ζωημι (Fξ) βεημ μωιξ it will hardly suffice for us εκυ μρύωρ, μημήνωμ (Fξ) εκυ πιηκρ you cannot, it means: you do not want

678. The Conjunction  $n_{l'}$  immediately following an Indefinite Pronoun (150) gives it a general, universal sense. A pleonastic  $m_{l'}$  can also be added to  $n_{l'}$ :

	whatever you may ask
пц пр (шլ) псд5	whoever may wish
ուը որ (ալ) երԹաս	wherever you may go
երբ որ (ալ) պատահի	whenever it may happen.

#### Idiomatic use of np

679. The Conjunction "" is used instead of Eff; if, Epp

մարդ որ բարկանայ, գազան կը գառնայ

when man gets angry, he becomes a beast

wwwnp nume, wiffugp integht when he said this, all kept silent.

**680.** When the Main Clause is negative or interrogative, the Dependent Clause may be introduced by  $n_{\mu}$ :

العندي بالمعندي بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمع بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمع بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمع بلمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمعام بالمع بلمعا

is there a famine that living is expensive?

**681.** The Subject is often stressed by the Verb  $I_{eff}$  and the Conjunction  $n_{ff}$ . The Verb  $I_{eff}$  must agree with the Subject in Person and Number. With Nouns and Pronouns in oblique Cases the Third Person Singular of  $I_{eff}$  ( $\xi$ ,  $\xi_{ff}$ ) is used:

Պարսիկները լուծեցին դաչին քը the Persians broke the pact. Stressed:

**Պարսիկներն էին որ լուծեցին դաչինքը** it is the Persians who broke the pact.

בשול הצוח לביות לביו the Armenians are always losing. Stressed:

ես եմ, էի որ	it is, was I
դուն ես, էիր որ	it is, was thou
ши 5, 5р пр	it is, was he
մենը ենը, էինը որ	it is, was we
ппе се, срепр	it is, was you
անոնը են, էին որ	it is, was they
ինծի է, էր որ	it is, was to me that
մեզմէ է, էր որ	it is, was from us that
ձեղմով է, էր որ	it is, was with you that

#### ORDER OF WORDS

682. Armenian differs from English in having more freedom in the arrangement of words in a Sentence.

**683.** As a rule, the Subject comes first and is followed by its Verb (Predicate) and by the Object. There is, however, a tendency — inherited from Classic Armenian — to place the Verb at the end of the Sentence. If the Verb is in a compound Tense, the Auxiliary may stay before or after the Participle, wherever it sounds better. Even the Subject can stay at the end.

Thus, the Sentence: God has disposed differently, can be put in many ways, equally regular:

14\*

Աստուած տնօրինած էր ուրիչ կերպ Աստուած էր տնօրինած ուրիչ կերպ Աստուած էր ուրիչ կերպ տնօրինած Աստուած ուրիչ կերպ տնօրինած էր Աստուած ուրիչ կերպ էր տնօրինած տնօրինած էր Աստուած ուրիչ կերպ տնօրինած էր ուրիչ կերպ Աստուած էր Աստուած տնօրինած ուրիչ կերպ էր Աստուած ուրիչ կերպ տնօրինած էր տնօրինած Աստուած ուրիչ կերպ էր տնօրինած ուրիչ կերպ Աստուած էր ուրիչ կերպ Աստուած տնօրինած էր ուրիչ կերպ տնօրինած Աստուած ուրիչ կերպ Աստուած տնօրինած էր ուրիչ կերպ Աստուած էր տնօրինած ուրիչ կերպ տնօրինած էր Աստուած ուրիչ կերպ էր Աստուած տնօրինած ուրիչ կերպ էր տնօրինած Աստուած

684. A short Parenthetical μ'μμξ sais, μμ μμμμβ relates, μμ μδπξ decides, μμ μμμμμμβ answers, and the like, is put before its Subject:

···· μρ պատմե Կորիւն narrates Koryun ···· μ'ρυξ Ղաղար Φարպեցի ... sais Lazar P'arpeci

**685.** There is no need of Inversion (Verb before Subject) in Interrogative Sentences. The stress of the voice or the Question Mark is put on the questioned word itself wherever it may stand.

The Sentence: Did the parents decide to forgive? may by worded thus:

որոչեցի՞ն ծնողները ներել որոչեցի՞ն ներել ծնողները ծնողները որոչեցի՞ն ներել ծնողները ներել որոչեցի՞ն ներել որոչեցի՞ն ծնողները ներել ծնողները որոչեցի՞ն

Any of the three words can have the Question Mark if it is questioned (see 40 e).

**686.** The other Parts of the Sentence either follow the Verb when it comes after the Subject, or are embodied within Subject and Verb, Verb and Subject, or else they may even precede both Subject and Verb.

Thus, the Sentence: *Maštoc* invented the Armenian letters with hard researches of many years, can be translated:

ՄաչԹոց Հնարեց Հայ գրերը չատ տարիներու տջնաջան խուղարկուԹեամբ

Հայ դրերը Մաչ[7-ոց etc.

չատ տարիներու տջնաջան խուղարկութեամը Մաչ– թոց․․․

չատ տարիներու տքնաջան խուղարկուԹեամբ Հնա– րեց․․․

չատ տարիներու տջնաջան խուղարկուԹեամբ Հայ գրերը․․․

ՄաչԹոց Հայ գրերը․․․ խուղարկուԹեամբ Հնարեց

ՄաչԹոց տջնաջան խուզարկուԹեամբ չատ տարիներու Հնարեց Հայ գրերը

ՄաչԹոց տ**ջնաջան խու**զարկուԹեամբ չատ տարիներու Հայ գրերը Հնարեց

Հայ գրերը․․․ ՄաչԹոց Հնարեց

687. a) Adjectives, Appositions, Pronouns, limiting Genetives precede the Noun they qualify;

b) Adverbs accompany the Verb before or after so that they may not be confused with Adjectives, when Adjectives are used as Adverbs.

c) Prepositions precede, Postpositions follow the Noun to which they belong.

#### SENTENCES AND CLAUSES

#### Compound Sentence

**688.** A Sentence containing a simple statement is called a Simple Sentence  $(\mu \mu \rho \rho \rho)$ .

A Sentence containing more than one statement is called a Compound Sentence  $(\mu m \eta m \eta p h m \rho h m \rho h m \rho)$ , and each single

statement in it is called a Clause  $(imfimi_min_ff_{fill})$ . If the Clauses of a Compound Sentence are simply added one to another without modifying one another, they are said to be Coördinate  $(4mf_mf_mf_m)$ . They are usually connected by a Coördinate Conjunction (439–442).

The order of words in Coördinate Clauses is the usual one, the Conjunctions coming first (450). Some of them — neptifu, whymu, umhuyu — can be put in the second place:

#### ղուք ուրեմն էիք մեր բարերարները so, you were our benefactors

ղատաւորն անդամ or անդամ դատաւորը even the judge սակայն դատախաղը or դատախաղը սակայն but the informer.

#### Complex Sentence

689. If one statement modifies another, the modifying Clause is said to be Subordinate (μπηρωμωρφ), Dependent (Ερμρηρηωμωίν, μωμωμ), and the Clause modified is called the Main (ημμωμη) Clause. The Sentence containing one or more Subordinate Clauses is called Complex (μωρφ).

The Subordination is indicated by some connecting words, either a Subordinate Conjunction (see 443–448) or a Relative (675, 676).

Subordinate Clauses are of various kinds according to the Conjunctions which introduce them.

#### Relative Clause

690. A Clause introduced by a Relative Pronoun is called a Relative Clause (juppenpulper):

# Կուր է անունը գետին, որ Հայաստանը կը բաժնէ Վրաստանէ

Cyr is the name of the river which separates Armenia from Georgia.

#### Temporal (Adverbial) Clause

**691.** A Clause introduced by an Adverb of Time (*μ*<sub>μ</sub>, *μ*<sub>μ</sub>μ μμ, *μ*μμ, *μ*μμ, *μ*μμ, *μ*μμ, *μ*μμ, *μ*μμ, *μ*μμμ) is called a Temporal Clause (*μ*μμμμμμμμ):

ջերմով տառապողներ իրենջ գիրենջ կազդուրուած կը կարծեն երբ պաղ ջուր խմեն

men suffering with fever think to be relieved, when they drink cold water

ημωσμη μη ηποξη, βήδε ηπο μη εδωδωσμη your neighbor was working while you were asleep

# չեմ կընար հանդարտիլ մինչեւ չտիրեմ հայերէն քերա– կանութեան

I cannot rest, as long as I have not mastered the Armenian Grammar.

#### Causal Clause

692. A Clause expressing the Cause of an action is called a Causal Clause (μμιπδιμπιμμιία) and is introduced by πμπηζωμιδιμ., μμιδιμ. ημ. ημ.

րողոջեցի, որով ետեւ վճիռը անիրաւ էր I did protest, because the sentence was unjust.

#### Final Clause

**693.** A Clause expressing the Purpose of an action is called a Final Clause  $(\underline{l}_{m} \underline{l}_{m} \underline{\delta}_{m} \underline{\delta}_{m} \underline{l}_{m} \underline{l}_{m} \underline{l}_{m})$  and is introduced by  $\underline{n}_{p} \underline{u} \underline{l}_{m} \underline{l}_{m}$  $\underline{\eta} \underline{h}$ ,  $\underline{n}_{p}$ :

h'nımtuş np mupphus we eat to live (that we may live) ηtunmuutut p ηphty, np putphu he sent ambassadors to say (who should say)

Lugpe le mebh, neufu qh neufu Luuqth the father works hard, that the son may rest.

Concessive Clause

694. A Clause expressing a Concession is called a Concessive Clause (*qhlnquluul*) and is introduced by *[dfhl, [df-ufun, [dfufun hl, sulumul np, suujud np: [dfhl, ulfu pul lumuphul fp, qnd siliughu* although everything was perfect, they were not satisfied.

215

695. A Clause expressing the Result of an action is called a Consecutive Clause (Standingulumb) and is introduced by np: mylicemic Standing for my intermy I was so far away that I did not see.

# ORDER OF WORDS IN SUBORDINATE CLAUSES

**696.** The examples in **690**—**695** show that the order of words in Subordinates does not differ from the order of words in Main Clauses.

The examples show further that the Subordinate can either a) follow or b) precede, the Main Clause, or even c) be embodied within it:

- a) մենը բոլորս ցաւ ղղացինը, թեեւ չյայտնեցինը, or
- b) թեեւ չյայտնեցինը, մենը բոլորս ցաւ ղղացինը, or
- c) if hip program, of the symposite of the grand of the show it, we all felt bad.

697. The Consecutive and Final Clauses introduced by *np* follow always the Main Clause (see 695).

698. When the Concessive Clause is put first, an emphasizing purg, uniquy may introduce the Main Clause:

Թէեւ չյայտնեցինը, [բայց, սակայն] մենը բոլորս ցաւ ղղացինը.

699. When the Conditional Clause precedes, the Main Clause may be introduced by Surger, up umbu:

# եԹէ ուչանայիջ [այն ատեն] պիտի ղգայիջ հետեւանջ– ները

if you were late, you would experience the consequences.

700. In Poetry and Rhetoric there is much more freedom concerning the order of words and Clauses.

## THE PERIOD — ՊԱՐԲԵՐՈՒԹԻՒՆ

701. The Period is that form of Sentence in which the Main Clause is modified by several Subordinates. The Subordinates are put within the Main Clause so that the Period gives a complete picture in one Sentence.

Unlike the ancient classics, the modern languages are not especially favorable to intricate Periods.

Modern Armenian, like English, prefers short, clear Sentences, each distinct and independent from the rest, and expressing one complete idea by itself.

# ELLIPSIS — ደԵՂՉՈՒՄ

**702.** Ellipsis is the omission of a word or words necessary to complete a Sentence. It is very common in Armenian.

703. Omission of a Noun: myn' Er munp unu uluur uluur uluur uluur uluur uluur uluur uluur uluur uluur. this witness and others like him are of no value.

704. Omission of a Noun and a Verb:

մարդու անուն կը յարդեն, բայց ոչ՝ Աստուծոյ for

- մարդու անուն կը յարդեն, բայց չեն յարդեր Աս– տուծոյ անունը
- they respect the name of a man, but not (they don't respect the name) of God.

705. Omission of the Indefinite Pronouns nuuf, umph:

[ոմանը] կան որ կը Հարստանան, կան որ կը սնան– կանան

there are some who become rich, some others who become bankrupt [*dupnp*] *lupnp lp upup*, *lup np lp guðup* some are mourning, some rejoicing.

217



706. Omission of Copula:

ηπιύ επιύ, μωμωπη ωηθπιύ you (are) asleep, your star is awake *Հայրա Հոս Է, մայրա Հոն* my father is here, my mother (is) there *Հοրը Հարստու Թիւնը կերած վատնած, Հիմայ մուրաց*-

կան է դարձած

he has devoured and consumed his father's wealth, and now he has become a beggar.

**708.** Omission of a Preposition (Postposition) which has been put once:

ծնողներո<sup>°</sup>ւ Համար աղաչեմ Թէ զաւակներու (Համար) shall I beg for parents or (for) children?

ձեզի<sup>°</sup> դէմ է խօսջը Թէ մեզի [դէմ] is the word against you or (against) us? մեզի<sup>°</sup> Հետ պիտի ջայէ Թէ ձեզի

will he walk with us or (with) you?

709. Omission of Conjunctions — especially of կամ, եւ, ու, the illative թէ, որ։

դործը այսօր վաղը կը վերջանայ the work will be finished today (or) tomorrow կը կարծեմ [[45, np] պիտի անձրեւէ I think it will rain

710. Omission of the entire Sentence replaced by an Adverb or one of the parts of the Sentence: *qui lu dunum, bu' us you forget, I don't quible lu dunuble, umunusuite huppe [stu dum-*

- *LL*<sub>P</sub>] we enter through the door, never through the window *npnL<sup>ο</sup> u fmf mmu umfumqmsmlfmu pnLfq*. *mpdmuunpfu*: to whom will you give your presidential vote? To the worthy one.
- 218 Armenian Church Library http://hygradaran.weebly.com